This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

Digitized by Google

H 44.60

Oxford University
ENGLISH FACULTY LIBRARY
Manor Road, Oxford OX1 3UQ
Telephone: (01865) 271050

Full term Monday to Friday 9.30 am to 7 pm
Saturday 10.00 am to 1 pm
Vacation Monday to Friday 9.30 am to 5 pm
Saturday CLOSED

This book should be returned on or before the latest date below:

Volumes which are lost, defaced, or damaged must be paid for.

CANCELLED

3000821370

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE HUTH LIBRARY.

THE WORKS
OF
GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

VOL. II.

PRECURSOR OF PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION.
AND
PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE.

1593.

Digitized by Google

Looke how a Tygreſſe that hath loſt her whelpe,
Runs fiercely raging through the woods aſtray :
And ſeeing her ſelfe depriu'd of hope or helpe,
Furiously aſſaults what's in her way,
To ſatisfie her wrath, (not for a pray ;)
So fell ſhe on me in outragious wiſe ;
As could diſdaine and ielouſie deuiſe.

DANIEL'S *The Complaint of Roſamona.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The Huth Library

OR

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN

Unique or Very Rare

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of

Henry Huth, Esqr.

Collated with Notes and Illustrations, etc.

BY THE

Rev. Alexander B. Grosart, LL.D. F.S.A.

FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The Huth Library.

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. II.

PRECURSOR OF PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION.
AND
PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE. A PREPARATIUE TO CERTAINE LARGER DISCOURSES, INTITULED NASHES S. FAME.
1593.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.
1884.
50 *Copies.*]

Digitized by Google

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS.

PAGE

PRECURSOR OF PIERCES SUPEREROGATION . . 1

PIERCES SUPEREROGATION, OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE. A PREPARATIUE TO CERTAINE LARGER DISCOURSES, INTITULED NASHES S. FAME 27

Digitized by Google

Foolifh he that feares, and faine would ftop
An inundation working on apace;
Runs to the breach, heapes mighty matter vp,
Throwes indigefted burthens on the place,
Loades with huge waights, the outfide and the top,
But leaues the inner parts in feeble cafe:
Thinking for that the outward forme feemes ftrong
'Tis fure inough, and may continue long.

But when the vnderworking waues come on,
Searching the fecrets of vnfenced waies,
The full maine Ocean following hard vpon,
Beares downe that idle frame, fkorning fuch ftaies;
Proftrates that fruftrate paines as if not done,
And proudly on his filly labors plaies,
Whilft he perceiues his error, and doth finde
His ill proceeding contrary to kind.

So fares it with our indirect diffeignes,
And wrong-contriued labors at the laft,
Whilft working Time or Iuftice vndermines
The feeble ground-worke, Craft thought laid fo faft:
Then when out-breaking vengeance vncombines
The ill-ioynd plots fo fairely ouercaft,
Turnes vp thofe ftrong-pretended heapes of fhowes,
And all thefe weake illufions ouerthrowes.

DANIEL'S *Civill Warres* (1599), B. iii., 4–6.

Digitized by Google

V.

PRECURSOR

OF

PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLDE ASSE.

1593.

Digitized by Google

NOTE.

This precursor of the larger 'Pierce's Supererogation' was separately published and in anticipation of its publication. When the latter appeared such copies of the former as remained unsold were bound up with it. But very few must so have remained over, as the present tractate is rarely found prefixed or affixed. Not more than three complete copies seem to be known.

Mr. J. Payne Collier—who reprinted both, like his other reprints of the Harvey-Greene books, with deplorable inaccuracy—supposed that Harvey or his friends suppressed or withdrew the precursor, because he had been so "much laughed at for the vanity and egotism" shown therein. But, seeing that the Printer in his Epistle at the close of the present tractate expressly states that it was to precede the other and larger—incidentally letting out that the so-called 'Preparatiue' was all of 'Nashes S. Fame' intended, for the Letters and Sonnets named are found appended to the larger 'Pierce's Supererogation'—ours is the true explanation, *i.e.*, separate and prior publication. Harvey's "selfe-admiration" might or might not be "so impervious that it could scarcely distinguish between applause and irony"; but *certes* none of the (high-flown) laudation was ironical, albeit obtained in part at least under misrepresentation and published without the authors' consent.

For the text of both I am indebted agnin to the Huth Library. There is a second complete exemplar of precursor and sequel in the British Museum; an incomplete in the Bodleian. See Memorial-Introduction for more of these books. A. B. G.

Digitized by Google

Pierces Supererogation

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled

NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Haruey.

Il vostro Malignare Non Giova Nulla.

LONDON
Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe.
1593.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

TO MY VERY GENTLE AND LIBE-
rall frendes, M. Barnabe Barnes, M. Iohn Thorius, M. Antony Chewt, and euery fauorable Reader.

OUING M. Barnabe, M. Iohn, and M. Antony, (for the reſt of my partiall Cōmenders muſt pardon me, till the Print be better acquainted with their names) I haue lately receiued your thriſe-curteous Letters, with the Ouerplus of your thriſe-ſweet Sonets annexed: the liberalleſt giftes, I beleeue, that euer you beſtowed vpon ſo ſlight occaſion, and the very prodigalleſt fruites of your flooriſhing wittes. Whoſe onely default is, not your, but my default, that the matter is nothing correſpondent to the manner; and miſelfe muſt either groſely forget miſelfe, or franckly acknowledge mi ſimple ſelfe an vnworthy

Digitized by Google

ſubiect of ſo worthy commendations. Which I cannot read without bluſhing, repeate without ſhame, or remember without griefe, that I come ſo exceeding-ſhort in ſo exceſſiue great accountes; the ſummes of your rich largeſſe, not of my poore deſert; and percaſe deuiſed to aduertiſe me what I ſhould be, or to ſignifie what you wiſh [me] to be; not to declare what I am, or to inſinuate what I may be. Eloquence, and Curteſie were euer bountifull in the amplifying veine: and it hath bene reputed a frendly Pollicy, to encourage their louing acquaintance to labour the attainement of thoſe perfections, which they blaſon in them, as already atcheiued. Either ſome ſuch intention you haue, by / way of Stratageme, to awaken my negligence, or enkindle my confidence; or you are diſpoſed by way of Ciuility, to make me vnreaſonably beholding vnto you for your extreme affection. Which I muſt either leaue vnrequited; or recompenſe affection with affection, & recommende me vnto you with your owne Stratageme, fitter to animate freſher ſpirites, or to whet finer edges. Little other vſe can I, or the world reape of thoſe great-great commendations, wherewith you, and diuers other Orient wittes haue newly ſurcharged me, by tendring ſo many kinde Apologies in my behalfe, and preſenting ſo many ſharpe inuectiues againſt my aduerſaries: vnleſſe alſo you purpoſed

Digitized by Google

to make me notably aſhamed of my cōfeſſed inſufficiency, guilty of ſo manifold imperfectiōs, in reſpect of the leaſt ſemblance of thoſe imputed ſingularities. Whatſoeuer your intendment in an ouerflowing affection was, I am none of thoſe, that greedily ſurfet of ſelfe-conceit, or ſottiſhly hugge their owne babyes. *Narciſſus* was a fayre boy, but a boy: *Suffenus* a noble braggard, but a braggard: *Neſtor* a ſweet-tongued old-man, but an Old-man: and *Tully* (whom I honour in his vertues, and excuſe in his ouerſightes) an eloquent Selfe-loouer, but a Selfe-loouer. He that thought to make himſelfe famous with his ouerweening and brauing *I'e, I'e, I'e*, might perhaps nourriſh an aſpiring imagination to imitate his *Ego, Ego, Ego*, ſo glorioufly reiterated in his gallant Orations. Some ſmirking minions are fine fellowes in their owne heades, and ſome cranke Princockes iolly men in their owne humours: as deſperate in reſolution, as the dowtieſt ranke of Errant knightes; and as coye in phantaſie, as the niceſt ſort of ſimpring damoſels, that in their owne glaſſes find no creature ſo bewtifull, or amiable, as their delitious ſelues. I haue beheld, / & who hath not ſeene ſome lofty conceites, towring very high, & coying themſelues ſweetly on their owne amounting winges, young feathers of old Icarus? The gay Peacocke is woondrouſly inamored vpon the

Digitized by Google

glittering fanne of his owne gorgious taile, and weeneth himſelfe worthy to be crowned the Prince of byrdes, and to be enthroniſhed in the chaire of ſupreme excellency. Would Chriſt, the greene Popiniay, with his newfangled ieſtes, as new as Newgate, were not aſmuch to ſay, as his owne Idol. Queint wittes muſt haue a Priuiledge to prank-vp their dainty limmes, & to fawne vpon their owne trickſie deuiſes. But they that vnpartially know themſelues, ſeuerely examine their owne abilities; vprightly counterpoiſe defectes with ſufficiencies; frankly confeſſe the greateſt part of their knowledge, to be the leaſt part of their ignorance; aduiſedly weigh the difficulties of the painfull and toyleſome way, the hard maintenance of credit eaſely gotten, the impoſſible ſatisfaction of vnſatisfiable expectation, the vncertaine ficklineſſe of priuate Phantaſie, & the certaine brittleneſſe of publique Fame; are not lightly bewitched with a fonde doting vpon their owne plumes. And they that deepely conſider vpon the weakeneſſe of inward frailty, the caſualtie of outward fortune, the detraction of Enuie, the virulency of Malice, the counter-pollicy of Ambition, and a hundred-hundred empeachments of growing reputation: that aſwell diuinely, as philoſophically haue learned to looue the gentleneſſe of Humanity, to embrace the mildneſſe of Modeſtie,

Digitized by Google

to kiſſe the meekeneſſe of Humilitie, to loath the odiouſneſſe of Pride, to aſſuage the egreneſs of Spite, to preuent the vengeance of Hatred, to reape the ſweet fruites of Temperance, to tread the ſmooth Path of Securitie, to take the firme courſe of Aſſuraunce, / and to enioy the felicitie of Contentment: that iudiciouſly haue framed themſelues to carry Mindes, like their Bodies, and Fortunes, as apperteineth vnto them, that would be loth to ouerreach in preſumptuous conceit: they I ſay, and all they that would rather vnderly the reproche of obſcuritie, then ouercharge their mediocritie with an illuſiue opinion of extraordinary furniture, and I wott not what imaginarie complementes: are readier, and a thouſand times readier, to returne the greateſt Prayſes, where they are debt, then to accept the meaneſt, where they are almes. And I could nominate ſome, that in effect make the ſame reckoning of Letters, Sonets, Orations, or other writinges commendatory, that they do of meate without nouriſhment, of hearbes without vertue, of plants without fruite; of a lampe without oyle, a linke without light, or a fier without heate. Onely ſome of vs are not ſo deuoide of good manner, but we conceiue what belongeth to ciuill duty, and will euer be preſt to interteine Curteſie with curteſie, & to requite any frendſhip with frendſhip: vnfainedly deſirous,

Digitized by Google

rather to recompenſe in deedes, then to gloſe, or paint in wordes. You may eaſely perſuade me to publiſh, that was long ſithence finiſhed in writing, and is now almoſt diſpatched in Print: (the amendes muſt be addreſſed in ſome other more materiall Treatiſe, or more formal Diſcourſe: and haply *Naſhes S. Fame* may ſupply ſome defectes of Pierces Supererogation:) but to ſuffer your thriſe-affectionate Letters and Sonets, or rather your thriſe-lauiſh beneuolences to be publiſhed, which ſo farre ſurmount not onely the mediocrity of my preſent endeuour, but euen the poſſibility of any my future emprooueement; I could not be perſuaded by any eloquence, or importunacy in the world, were I not as monſtrouſly / reuiled by ſome other without reaſon, as I am exceſſiuely extolled by you without cauſe. In which caſe he may ſeeme to a diſcreet enemy excuſable, to an indifferent frend iuſtifiable, that is not tranſported with his owne paſſion, but relyeth on the iudgement of the learnedeſt, and referreth himſelfe to the Practiſe of the wiſeſt. In the one, eſteeming *Plutarch* or *Homer* as an hundred Autors: in the other, valuing *Cato*, or *Scipio*, as a thouſand Examples. I neuer read, or heard of any reſpectiue, or conſiderate perſon, vnder the degree of thoſe that might reuenge at pleaſure, contemne with autority, aſſecure themſelues from common

Digitized by Google

obloquy, or commande publique reputation, (mighty men may finde it a Pollicy, to take a ſingular, or extraordinary courſe), ſo careleſſe of his owne credit : ſo reckleſſe of the preſent time, ſo ſenſeleſſe of the poſterity, ſo negligent in occurents of conſequence, ſo diſſolute in his proceedings, ſo prodigall of his name, ſo deuoide of all regarde, ſo bereft of common ſenſe, ſo vilely baſe, or ſo hugely hawtie of minde ; that in caſe of infamous imputation, or vnworthy reproch, notoriouſly ſcattered-abroad, thought it not requiſite, or rather neceſſary, to ſtand vpon his owne defence according to Equity, and euen to labour his owne commendation according to the preſented occaſion. Diſcourſes yeeld plenty of Reaſons : and Hiſtories affourde ſtore of Examples. It is no vain-glory to permit with conſideration, that abuſed Modeſty hath affected with diſcretion. It is vanity to controwle, that true honour hath practiſed : and folly to condemne, that right wiſedome hath allowed. If any diſlike Immodeſty indeede, deſpiſe vanity indeede, reprooue Arrogancy indeede, or loath Vainglory indeede ; I am as forward with Tongue and Hart as the foremoſt of the forwardeſt : and were / my pen anſwerable, perhaps at occaſion it ſhould not greatly lagge behinde. To accompliſh, or aduaunce any vertuous purpoſe, (ſith it is now enforced to be ſturring), it might eaſely be

Digitized by Google

entreated, euen to the vttermoſt extent of that little-little Poſſibility, wherewith it hath pleaſed the Greateſt to endowe it. Howbeit Curteſie is as ready to ouerloade with prayſe, as Malice eger to ouerthrow with reproch. Both ouerſhoote, as the manner is; but malice is the Diuell. For my poore part, I hope the One ſhall do me as little harme, as fayre weather in my iorney: I am ſuer, the other hath done me more good, then was intended, and ſhall neuer puddle or annoy the courſe of the cleere running water. Albeit I haue ſtudied much, and learned little: yet I haue learned to gleane ſome handfulls of corne out-of the rankeſt cockle: to make choice of the moſt fragrant flowers of *Humanitie*, the moſt vertuous hearbes of *Philoſophie*, the moſt ſoueraine fruites of *Gouernment*, and the moſt heauenly manna of *Diuinitie*: to be acquainted with the fayreſt, prouided for the fowleſt, delighted with the temperateſt, pleaſed with the meaneſt, and contented with all *weather*. Greater men may profeſſe, and can atchieue greater matters: I thanke God, I know the lēgth, that is, the ſhortnes of mine owne foote. If it be any mans pleaſure to extenuate my ſufficiēcy in other knowledge, or practiſe, to empeach my ability in wordes, or deedes, to debaſe my fortune, to abridge my commendations, or to annihilate my fame, he

Digitized by Google

ſhall finde a cold aduerſary of him, that hath layed hoat paſſions awatering, and might eaſely be induced to be the Inuectiue of his owne Non-proficiency. Onely he craueth leaue to eſtimate his credit, and to value his honeſty, as behooueth euery man, that regardeth any good: and if withall it be his / vnfained requeſt, that Order ſhould repeale diſorder; moderation reſtraine licentiouſneſſe; diſcretion abandon vanity; mildneſſe aſſuage choller; meekneſſe alay arrogancy; conſideration reclaime raſhneſſe; indifferency attemper paſſion; Curteſie mitigate, Charity appeaſe, & Vnity attone debate: pardon him. Or, in caſe nothing will preuaile with fury but fury, and nothing can winne deſired amity, but pretended hoſtility, that muſt driue-out one naile with another, & beat-away one wedge with another, according to the Latin Prouerbe: Pardon him alſo, that in the reſolution of a good minde, will commaund, what he cannot entreat; and extort, what he cannot perſuade. That little may be done with no great adoo: and, ſeeing it may as ſurely, as eaſely be done, I am humbly to beſeech eſtabliſhed Wiſedome, to winke at one experiment of aduenturous Folly; neuer before embarked in any ſuch actiō, and euer to eſchewe the like with a chary regard, where any other mediation may purchaſe redreſſe. I will not vrge what conniuence hath been noted in as

Digitized by Google

diſfauorable caſes: it is ſufficient for me to pleade mine own acquittall. Other prayſe he affecteth not, that in a deepe inſight into his innermoſt partes, findeth not the higheſt pitch of his Hope, equiualent to the loweſt pit of your commendation. And if by a gentle conſtruction, or a fauorous encouragement, he ſeemeth any thing in others opinion, that is nothing in his owne Cenſure, the leſſer his merite, the greater their mercy; and the barrainer his deſert, the frutefuller your liberality. Whoſe vnmeaſurable prayſes I am to interpret, not as they may ſeeme in ſome bounteous conceit, but as they are in mine owne knowledge; good wordes, but vnfitly applied; frendly beneuolences, but waſtfully beſtowed; gallant amplifications, but ſlenderly deſer/ued: what but termes of Ciuility, or fauours of Curteſie, or hyperboles of Looue: whoſe franke allowance I ſhall not be able to earne with the ſtudy of twenty yeares more: in briefe, nothing but partiall witneſſes, preiudicate iudgements, idle preambles, and in effect meere wordes. And euen ſo as I found them, I leaue them. Yet let me not diſmiſſe ſo extenſiue curteſie with an empty hand. Whatſoeuer I am, (that am the leaſt little of my thoughtes, and the greateſt contempt of mine owne hart) *Parthenophill* and *Parthenophe* embelliſhed, the *Spaniſh Counſellour* Ingliſhed, and *Shores Wife* eterniſed; ſhall euer-

Digitized by Google

laſtingly teſtifie what you are: go forward in maturity, as ye haue begun in pregnancy, and behold *Parthenopoeus* the ſonne of the braue Meleager, *Homer* himſelfe, and of the ſwift Atalanta *Calliope* herſelfe: be thou, Barnabe, the gallant Poet, like Spencer, or the valiant ſouldiour, like Baſkeruile; and euer remember thy *French ſeruice* vnder the braue Earl of Eſſex. Be thou, Iohn, the many-tongued Linguiſt, like Andrewes, or the curious Intelligencer, like Bodley; and neuer forget *thy Netherlandiſh traine* vnder Him, that taught the Prince of Nauarre, now the valorous king of Fraunce. Be thou Antony, the flowing Oratour, like Dooue, or the ſkilfull Heralde, like Clarentius; and euer remember *thy Portugall voyage* vnder Don Antonio. The beginning of vertuous Proceedings, is the one halfe of honorable actions. Be yourſelues in hope, and what yourſelues deſire in effect: and I haue attained ſome portion of my requeſt. For you cannot wiſh ſo exceeding-well vnto me, but I am as ready with tongue, and minde, to wiſh a great-deale better vnto you, and to reacquite you with a large vſury of moſt-affectionate prayers, recommending you to the diuine giftes, and gratious bleſſings of Heauen.

May / it pleaſe the fauorable Reader, to voutſafe me the Curteſie of his Patience, vntill he hath thoroughly peruſed the whole Diſcourſe at his

Digitized by Google

howers of leyſure (for ſuch ſcriblings are hardly worth the vacanteſt howers): I am not to importune him any farther; but would be glad, he might finde the Whole, leſſe tedious in the end, then ſome Parts in the beginning, or midſt; or, at-leaſt, that one peece might helpe to furniſh-out amendes for an other. And ſo taking my leaue with the kindeſt Farewell of a moſt thankfull minde, I deſiſt from wearying him with a tedious Preface, whom I am likely to tire with ſo many ſuperfluous Diſcourſes. Howbeit might it happely pleaſe the ſweeteſt Interceſſour, to enſweeten the bittereſt gall of Spite, and to encalme the roughest tempeſt of Rage; I could cordially wiſh, that *Naſhes S. Fame* might be the Period of my Inuectiues: and *the excellent Gentlewoman*, my patroneſſe, or rather Championeſſe in this quarrel, is meeter by nature, and fitter by nurture, to be an enchaunting Angell, with her white quill, then a tormenting Fury with her blacke inke. It remaineth at the election of one, whom God indue with more diſcretion.

At London: this 16. of July, 1593. The inuiolable frend of his entire frendes, Gabriell Haruey. /

Digitized by Google

Her owne Prologue, or Demurr.

O Muſes, may a wooman poore, and blinde,
A Lyon-draggon, or a Bull-beare binde?
Iſt poſſible for puling wench to tame
The furibundall Champion of Fame?
He brandiſheth the whurlewinde in his mouth,
And thunderbolteth ſo-confounding ſhott:
Where ſuch a Bombard-goblin, North, or South,
With drad Pen-powder, and the conquerous pott?
Silly it is, that I can ſing, or ſay:
And ſhall I venture ſuch a bluſtrous fray?
Hazard not, panting quill, thy aſpen ſelfe:
Hel'e murther thy conceit, and braine thy braine.
Spare me, ô ſuper domineering Elfe,
And moſt, railipotent *for euer raine.*
Si Tibi vis ipſi parcere, parce Mihi.

Her Counter-ſonnet, or Correction of her owne Preamble.

Scorne *frump the meacock Verſe that dares not ſing,*
Drouping, ſo like a flagging flowre in raine:
Where doth the Vrany *or* Fury *ring,*
That ſhall enfraight my ſtomacke with diſdaine?
Shall Frend put-vp ſuch braggardous affrontes?
Are milkſop Muſes ſuch whiteliuer'd Trontes?
Shall Boy the gibbet be of Writers all,
And none hang-vp the gibbet on the wall?

Digitized by Google

If / dreery hobbling Ryme hart-broken be,
And quake for dread of Danters ſcarecrow Preſſe:
Shrew Proſe, thy pluckcrow implements addreſſe,
And pay the hangman pen his double fee.
Be Spite a Sprite, a Termagant, a Bugg:
Truth feares no ruth, and can the Great Diu'll tugg
——Ultrix accincta flagello.

Her old Comedy, newly intituled.

My Proſe is reſolute, as Beuis ſworde:
March rampant beaſt in formidable hide:
Supererogation Squire on cockhorſe ride:
Zeale ſhapes an aunſwer to the blouddieſt worde.
If nothing can the booted Souldiour *tame,*
Nor Ryme, nor Proſe, nor Honeſty, nor Shame,
But Swaſh *will ſtill his trompery aduaunce,*
I'e leade the gagtooth'd fopp *a new-founde daunce.*
Deare howers were euer cheape to pidling me:
I knew a glorious, and brauing Knight,
That would be deem'd a truculentali wight:
Of him I ſcrauld a dowty Comedy.
Sir Bombarduccio *was his cruell name:*
But Gnaſharduccio *the ſole brute of* Fame.

L'Enuoy.

See, how He brayes, and fumes at me poore laſſe,
That muſt immortaliſe the killcowe Aſſe. /

Digitized by Google

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFVLL, his especiall deare frend, M. Gabriell Haruey, Doctour of Lawe.

SWEET M. Doctour Haruey, (for I cannot intitule you with an Epithite of lesse value then that which the Grecian, and Roman Oratours ascribed to Theophrastus, in respect of so many your excellent labours, garnished with the garland of matchlesse Oratory): if at any time either the most earnest persuasion of a deare frend, and vnusually most deare, and constant, adiured therevnto by the singular vertue of your most prayse-worthy, and vnmatchable wit: or the woonderful admiration of your peerlesse conceit, embraued with so many gorgeous ornamentes of diuine Rhetorique: or the doubtlesse successiue benefit thereof, deuoted to the glory of our English Eloquence, and our vulgar Tuscanisme (if I may so terme it); may worke any plausible or respectiue motions with you to bewtifie, and enrich our age, with those most praise-moouing workes, full of gallantest discourse, and reason, which I vnderstand by some assured intelligence be now glowing vpon the anvile, ready to receiue the right artificiall forme of diuinest workemāship: thē let I beseech you, nay, by all our mutuall frendships I coniure you (loue and admiration of them arming me with the placarde of farther confidence) those, and other

Digitized by Google

your incomparable writings, ſpeedily, or rather pre/ſently, ſhew thēſelues in the ſhining light of the Sunne. That, by this Publication of ſo rare, & rich Diſcourſes, our Engliſh Rauens, the ſpitefull enemyes to all birdes of more bewtifull wing, and more harmonious note then themſelues, may ſhroude themſelues in their neſts of baſeſt obſcurity, & keepe hoſpitality with battes, and owles, fit conſorts for ſuch vile carions. Good Sir, ariſe, and confound thoſe Viperous Cryticall monſters, and thoſe prophane Atheiſtes of our Commonwealth; which endeuour with their mutinous and Serpentine hiſſing, like geeſe, not to arme the Senatours and Oratours of Rome, but to daunt, aſtoniſh, and, if it were poſſible, to ouerthrow them. And ſithence the very thunder-lightning of your admirable Eloquence, is ſufficiētly auailable to ſtrike them with a lame Palſie of tongue, (if they be not already ſmitten with a ſenceleſſe Apoplexy in head, which may eaſely enſewe ſuch contagious Catharres and Reumes, as I am priuy ſome of them haue been grieuouſly diſſeaſed withall), miſſe not, but hitt them ſeurly home, as they deſerue with Supererogation. You haue bene reputed euermore, ſince firſt I heard of you in Oxford and elſewhere, to haue bene as much giuen to fauour, commende, and frequent ſuch as were approoued, or toward in learning,

Digitized by Google

witt, kinde behauiour, or any good quality, as may be required in any man of your demerit: an vndoubted ſigne, how much you loath Inuectiues or any needeles contētions. I would (as many your affectionate frēds would) it had bene your fortune to haue encountred ſome other Paranymphes, then ſuch as you are now to diſcipline: moſt vnwillingly, I perceiue, but moſt neceſſarily, & not without eſpeciall conſideration, being ſo manifeſtly vrged, and groſely prouoked to defend yourſelfe. But you haue ere now bene acquainted / with patience perforce: and I hope the moſt deſperate ſwaſher of them will one day learne to ſhew himſelf honeſter or wiſer. And thus recommending your ſweete endeuours, with your grauer ſtudies, to the higheſt treaſury of heauenly Muſes; I right hartely take my leaue with a Sonnet of that Muſe, that honoreth the Vrany of du Bartas, and yourſelfe: of du Bartas elſewhere; here of him, whoſe excellent Pages of the French King, the Scottiſh King, the braue Monſieur de la Nöe, the aforeſayd Lord du Bartas, Sir Philip Sidney, and ſundry other worthy perſonages, deſerue immortall commendation. I thanke him very hartely that imparted vnto me thoſe fewe ſheetes: and if all be like them, truly all is paſſing notable, and right ſingular.

Digitized by Google

SONNET.

Thoſe learned Oratours, *Roomes auncient ſages,*
Perſuaſions Pith, directours of affection,
The mindes chief counſail, rhetoriques perfection,
The pleaſaunt baulms of peace, warres fierce outrages:
Sweet Grecian Prophets, *whoſe ſmooth Muſe aſſuages*
The Furies powerfull wrath, poiſons infection:
Philoſophers *(by Cauſes due connexion,*
Match't with th' Effects of Nature) future ages
Embrauing with rich documents of Art: /
The wiſeſt States-men *of calme Commonweales:*
The learned Generall Councels, *which impart*
Diuineſt laws, whoſe wholeſome Phyſique Heales
Both Church, and Layety: All in one *beholde*
Ennobled Arts, as Precious ſtones in golde.

From my lodging in Holborne: this of June. 1593. Your moſt affectionate,

Barnabé Barnes.

Hauing peruſed my former Sonet, if it may pleaſe you, Sir, to do aſmuch for your deare frends *Parthenophill*, and *Parthenophe*, they ſhall haue the deſired fruite of their ſhort exerciſe, and will reſt beholding to your curteous acceptance: which they would be glad to reacquite in the loouingeſt manner they may. And ſo moſt affec-

Digitized by Google

tionatly recommend themſelues vnto your good ſelf: whoſe vnblemiſhed fame they will euermore maintaine with the beſt bloud of their hartes, tongues, and Pennes. We will not ſay, how much we long to ſee the whole Prayſes of your two notorious enemyes, the *Aſſe* and the *Foxe*.

SONET.

Naſh, or the confuting Gentleman.

The Muſes ſcorne; the Courtiers laughing-ſtock;
The Countreys Coxecombe; Printers proper new;
The Citties Leproſie; the Pandars ſtew;
Vertues diſdayne; honeſties aduerſe rock;
Enuies vile champion; ſlaunders ſtumblingblock.
Graund | Oratour of Cunny-catchers crew;
Baſe broaching tapſter of reports vntrue;
Our moderne Viper, and our Countryes mock;
True Valors Cancer-worme, ſweet Learnings ruſt.
Where ſhall I finde meete colours, and fit wordes,
For ſuch a counterfaict, and worthleſſe matter?
Him, whom thou rayleſt on at thine owne luſt,
Sith Bodine *and ſweet* Sidney *did not flatter,*
His Inuectiue thee too much grace affordes.

Parthenophil.

Digitized by Google

SONET.

Haruey, or the ſweet Doctour.

Sidney, *ſweet Cignet, pride of Thameſis;*
Apollos laurell; Mars-his proud proweſſe:
Bodine, *regiſter of Realmes happineſſe,*
Which Italyes, and Fraunces wonder is:
Hatcher, *with ſilence whom I may not miſſe:*
Nor Lewen, *Rhetoriques richeſt nobleſſe:*
Nor Wilſon, *whoſe diſcretion did redreſſe*
Our Engliſh Barbariſme: adioyne to this
Diuineſt morall Spencer: *let theſe ſpeake*
By their ſweet Letters, which do beſt vnfould
Harueys *deſerued praiſe: ſince my Muſe weake*
Cannot relate ſomuch as hath bene tould
By theſe Fornam'd: *then, vaine it were to bring*
New feather to his Fames ſwift-feathered wing.

Parthenophe.

THE PRINTERS ADUERTISSEment to the Gentleman Reader.

Curteous Gentlemen, it ſeemed good to M. Doctour Haruey, for breuity-ſake, and becauſe he liked not ouer-long Preambles, or Poſtambles, to ſhort discourſes, to omit the commendatorie Letters, and Sonnets of M. Thorius, M. Chewt, and diuers other his affectionate frendes of London, and both the

Digitized by Google

Vniuerſities. Which neuertheleſſe, are reſerued to be prefixed, inſerted, or annexed, either in his defenſiue Letters, *enlarged with certaine new Epiſtles of more ſpeciall note; or in his* Diſcourſes of Naſhes S. Fame, *already finiſhed, & preſently to be publiſhed, as theſe ſhall like their interteinement: of whoſe fauorable & plauſible Welcome, diuers learned and fine wittes haue preſumed the beſt. Howbeit finally it was thought not amiſſe, vpon conference with ſome his aduiſed acquaintance, to make choice of ſome two or three of the reaſonableſt, and temperateſt Sonnets (but for variety, & to auoyde tediouſneſſe in the entrance, rather to be annexed in the end, then prefixed in the beginning of the preſent Diſcourſes): one of the foreſayd M. Thorius, an other of M. Chewt, and the third of a learned French gentleman, Monſieur Fregeuill Gautius, who hath publiſhed ſome weighty Treatiſes, aſwell Politique as Religious, both in Latin and French; and hath acquainted M. Doctour Haruey with certaine moſt profitable Mathematicall deuiſes of his own inuention. The reſidue is not added by me, but annexed by the Autor himſelfe: whom I humbly recommende to your curteous Cenſure, and ſo reſt from ouertroubling you with my vnpoliſhed lines.*

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

VI.

PIERCE'S SUPEREROGATION OR A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLDE ASSE.

1593.

Digitized by Google

NOTE.

It will be noticed that the title-page of 'Pierce's Supererogation' is identical with that of its slender precursor (see relative Note, page 2). So that the precursor was a 'preparative' to a 'preparative,' although the Printer in his Epistle to the former deals with the so-called 'Preparative' as really 'Nashes S. Fame,' by appending to it the Letters and Sonnets specified by him. As stated in Note before the Precursor, I am indebted for our text to the Huth Library. See Memorial-Introduction for more.

A. B. G.

Digitized by Google

Pierces Supererogation

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled
NASHES S. FAME.

Gabriell Harvey.

IL VOSTRO
MALIGNARE NON
GIOVA NVLLA.

(Touch, and respectfully, the tree.)

LONDON
Imprinted by Iohn Wolfe.
1593.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Pierces Supererogation.

OR

A NEW PRAYSE OF THE OLD ASSE.

A Preparatiue to certaine larger Discourses, intituled

NASHES S. FAME.

Was euer vnwilling to vndertake any enterprise, that was vnmeete for me; or to play any part, either in earnest, or in iest, that might ill beseeme me: and neuer more vnwilling then at this instant, when I must needes do it, or put something in hazard, that I would be loth to commit to the curtesie of aduenture. Not because my Confuters swordes, or my enemies daggers carry any credite with the wise; or because my Letters feare any

Digitized by Google

diſcredite with the honeſt; or becauſe I cannot abide to be confuted, that daily confute my ſelfe, and condemne euery mine owne default with rigour: but becauſe Silence may ſeeme ſuſpicious to many; Patience contemptible to ſome; A good minde, A bad hart to thoſe, that value all by courage; A knowne forbearer of Libellers, A continuall bearer of coales; and there is no end of abuſes vpon abuſes, of iniuries vpon iniuries, of contempt vpon contempt, where preſumptuous Impudency, and odious Slaunder, the two errantiſt vagabonds in the world, may ſafe conduct themſelues, and franckely paſſe vncontrolled. Yet were that, either / all, or the worſt of all, I could ſtill vow ſilence in brawles, and would ſtill profeſſe Patience in wronges: (I hate brawles with my hart: and can turne-ouer A volume of wronges with a wett finger:) but ſome cunning men, that carry hooney in their mouthes, and gall in their hartes, not ſo ſweete in the Premiſſes, as bitter in the Concluſion, can ſmoothly, and finely deſcant vpon the leaſt aduantage, howſoeuer iniurious: and certaine pretty Experiences, by way of ſenſible inſtruction, haue taught ſome, that Malice was neuer ſuch an hypocrite, as now; and the world neuer ſuch a Scoggin, as now; & the Diuell neuer ſuch a knaue, as now: & what a deſperate diſſoluteneſſe were it in him, that regardeth his

Digitized by Google

good name, to abandon himſelfe, or to relinquiſh the deereſt thing in this life, (I know no deerer thing, then honeſt credite) to the fauour of Enuy, or to the diſcretion of Fortune? Gentlemen, he is hardly beſtead for a Patrone, that relyeth on the tuition of Enuy, or repoſeth his affiance in the protection of Fortune: and he muſt not take it vnkindely, to bee forſaken of other by the way, that forſaketh himſelſe in the way. Euen he that loueth not to be his owne defender, much leſſe his owne prayſer (do him no wrong, my Maſters, though ye doe him no right) yet hateth to be his owne traytor: and hath reaſon to experimente ſome rounde concluſions, before hee offer his throte to the blade of villany, or his forhead to the brand of diffamation. And although he be the ſubiect of his own contempt, and the argument of his owne Satyres: (ſurely no man leſſe doteth vpon himſelfe, or more ſeuerely cenſureth his own imperfections:) yet he in ſome reſpects diſdayneth to be reuiled by the abiects of the world. Whoſe diſpraiſe in ſome age were a commendation, and whoſe praiſe an inuectiue: but this is a queint world, and needeth no Aprill / ſhowers, to furniſh May-games. I proteſt, I haue theſe many yeeres, not in pride, but in iudgement, ſcorned, to appeere in the rancke of this ſcribling generation: and could not haue bene hired with a

Digitized by Google

great fee, to publiſh any Pamflet of whatſoeuer nature, in mine owne name, had I not bene intollerably prouoked, firſt by one rakehell, and now by an other, the two impudenteſt mates, that euer haunted the preſſe: (ſome haue called them knaues in groſe: I haue found them fooles in retayle:) but when it came to this deſperate point, that I muſt needes either bee a baſe writer, or a vile Aſſe in printe, the leſſe of the two euils was to be choſen: and I compelled rather to alter my reſolution for a time, then to preiudice my ſelfe for euer. They that liſt may feede at the manger with the ſonnes of the Mule: it is another Table-Philoſophy, that I fanſie. Howbeit amongſt all the misfortunes, that euer happened vnto me, I account it my greateſt affliction, that I am conſtrained to buſy my penne, without ground, or ſubſtance of diſcourſe, meete for an actiue and induſtrious world. Euery man hath his croſſes in one accident, or other: but I know not a greeuouſſer perſecution, then a baſe employment of precious time, neceſſarily enforced. Other croſſes may ſomeway edifie: this is a plague without remedy; a torment without end; a hell without redemption. As in the courſe of my ſtudy, it was allwayes my reckoning; He looſeth nothing, whatſoeuer he loſeth, that gaineth Time: ſo in the taſke of my writing, or other exerciſe,

Digitized by Google

it is my account; He gayneth nothing, whatſoeuer he gayneth, that looſeth Time. A good matter, deliuered in good manner, winneth ſome eſtimation with good mindes: but no manner ſufficient to countenance a contemptible Theame: & a raſcall ſubiect abaſeth any forme: or what hath drowned the / memory of the trimmeſt, and daintieſt trifles, that fine conceit hath deuiſed? Were it mine owne election, I might worthily incurre many reproofes, and iuſtly impute them to my ſimple choyce: but Neceſſity hath as little free will, as Law; and compelleth like a Tyrant, where it cannot perſwade, like an Oratour, or aduiſe like a Counſellour. Any Vertue, an honourable Common-place, and a flouriſhing braunch of an heauenly tree: Politique, and militar affaires, the woorthieſt matters of conſultation, and the two Herculean pillers of noble ſtates: the priuate liues of excellent perſonages in ſondry courſes, and the publike actions of puiſſant nations in ſondry gouernementes, ſhining mirrours of notable vſe for the preſent time, and future ages. Were it at my appointment, to diſpoſe freely of mine owne howers: O how willingly, and cheerefully could I ſpend the freſheſt & deereſt part of my life, in ſuch argumentes of valour? Learninge is a goodly and gallant Creature in many partes: & diuers members of that beautifull body vpbraide

Digitized by Google

the moſt-exquiſite penne, and moſt-curious pencil of inſufficiency: no diligence too-much, where no labour inough: the fruitefulleſt ſciences require painefulleſt induſtry, and ſome liuely principles would be touched to the quicke: whatſoeuer booke-caſe, or ſchole-point is found by experience to be eſſentiall, and practicable in the world, deſerueth to be diſcuſſed with ſharpe inuention, and ſound iudgement. I could yet take pleaſure, and proffite, in canuaſſing ſome Problems of naturall Philoſophy, of the Mathematiques, of Geography, and Hydrography, of other commodious experimentes, fit to aduaunce many valorous actions: and I would vppon mine owne charges, trauaile into any parte of Europe, to heare ſome pregnant Paradoxes, and certaine ſingular queſtions in the / higheſt profeſſions of Learning, in Phyſick, in Law, in Diuinity, effectually and thoroughly diſputed *pro*, *&* *contra:* and would thinke my trauaile as aduantageouſly beſtowed to ſome purpoſes of importance, as they that haue aduenturouſly diſcouered new-found Landes, or brauely ſurprized Indies. What conferences, or diſputations, what Parliaments, or Councels, like thoſe, that deliberate vpon the beſt gouernement of Commonwealthes, and the beſt diſcipline of Churches; the dubble anchor of the mighty ſhipp, and the two great Luminaries of

Digitized by Google

the world? Other extrauagant diſcourſes, not materiall, or quarrelous contentions, not auaileable, are but waſtinge of winde, or blotting of paper. What ſhould Exerciſe, or ſtuddy, burne the Sunne or the candle in vaine? or what ſhould I doe againſt my ſelfe, in ſpeakinge for my ſelfe, if outward reſpectes did not inwardly gripe, and a preſent exigence lay violent handes vpon me? Though extremity be powerable, yet an vnwilling will is excuſable. Philoſophers, and Lawyers can beſt argue the caſe of inuoluntary actes: but what ſo forcible, as compulſion: or ſo pardonable, as a paſſiue action? Blame him not, or blame him gently, that would be a little loth, to be dieted at the racke of the old Aſſe, or to be bitten of the young dog. He is no party in the cauſe, that pleadeth thus againſt *Ariſtogiton.* Sweet Gentlemen, imagine it to be a ſpeech, addreſſed vnto your ſelues. *Peraduenture the viper did neuer bite any of you; and the Gods forbid, it ſhould euer bite you: but when you eſpie any ſuch pernicious creature, you preſently diſpatch it: in like manner when you behold a Sycophant, and a man of a viperous nature, looke not till he hath bitten ſome of you, but ſo ſoone as he ſtarteth-vp, pull him downe.* And againe in another place of the ſame ſententious, and politique Oration: *Hee that / mainetayneth a Sycophant, is by nature and kinde an ennemy of the good:*

Digitized by Google

vnleſſe ſome-body imagine, that the ſeede and roote of a naughty Sycophant ought to remaine in the Citty, as it were for ſtore, or good huſbandry. Demoſthenes was as deepely wiſe, as highly eloquent: and hath many ſuch notable ſentences, as it were Caueats, or Prouiſoes, againſt the daungerous ennemies of that flouriſhing Citty, and eſpecially againſt Calumniatours, whoſe viperous ſting hee could by no meanes auoide: albeit otherwiſe ſuch an Oratour, as could allure heartes with perſwaſion, or coniure mindes with aſtoniſhment. I would no other Citty loued figges: or muſt an other Citty of neceſſity loue figges, becauſe it is growne an other Athens, a mother of eloquence, a nurſe of learning, a grandame of valour, a ſeat of honor, and as Ariſtotle termed Athens, a garden of Alcinous, wherein one fruite ripeneth vpon an other, one peare vppon an other, one grape vpon an other, and one figge vppon an other. The Sycophant be his owne interpreter: & if he may be licenſed, or permitted to bee his owne caruer too, much good may it doe him, and ſweete digeſtion geue him ioy of his dainety figg. I muſt haue a little care of one, that cãnot eaſily brucke vnreaſonable ſawcineſſe: & would be loth to ſee the garden of Alcinous made the garden of Greene, or Motley. It was wont to be ſaid by way of a Prouerbe; Hee that will be made a ſheepe, ſhall find wolues inough: but forſooth this

Digitized by Google

exceeding-wiſe worlde, is a great Aſſe-maker: and he that will ſuffer himſelfe to be proclaimed an Aſſe in printe, ſhall bee ſure neuer to want loade and loade inough. Who ſo ready to call her neighbour, a ſkold, as the rankeſt ſkold of the pariſh: or who ſo forward to accuſe, to debaſe, to reuile, to crow-treade an other, as the arranteſt fellow in a country? Let his owne mouth / be his paſport, or his owne penne his warrant: & who ſo leawd as his greateſt aduerſary, modeſty: or ſo honeſt, as his deereſt frend, villany: or ſo learned, as his learnedeſt counſell, vanity: or ſo wiſe, as his profoundeſt Autor, young Apuleius. What familiar ſpirite of the Ayre, or fire, like the glibb, & nimble witt of young Apuleius? or where is the Eloquence that ſhould deſcribe the particular perfections of young Apuleius? Prudence, may borrow, diſcretion: Logique, arguments; Rhetorique, coulours; Phantaſy, conceites; Steele, an edge; and Gold, a luſter, of young Apuleius. O the rare, and queint Inuention, ô the gallant, and gorgeous Elocution: ô the braue, and admirable amplifications: ô the artificiall, and fine extenuations: ô the liuely pourtraitures of egregious prayſes, and diſprayſes: ô the cunning, and ſtraunge mingle-mangles: ô the pithy ieſtes, and maruelous girdes of yong Apuleius: the very prodigality of Art, and Nature. What greater

Digitized by Google

impoſſibility, then to decipher the high, and mighty ſtile of young Apuleius, without a liberall portion of the ſame eleuate ſpirite? Happy the old father, that begat, and thriſe happy the ſweete Muſes, that ſuckled, and foſtered young Apuleius. Till Admiration hath found-out a ſmoother and trickſier quill for the purpoſe: Deſire muſt be content to leaue the ſupple and tidy conſtitution of his omni-ſufficient Witt, vndiſplayed. Onely it becommeth gentle mindes to yeeld themſelues thanckefull; and to tender their bounden duety to that ineſtimable pearle of Eloquence, for this precious glimze of his incomprehenſible valour; one ſhorte Maxime, but more worth, then all the Axioms of Ariſtotle; or the Idees of Plato; or the Aphoriſmes of Hippocrates; or the Paragraphes of Iuſtinian. He knoweth not to manage his penne, that was not born with an Aſſe / in his mouth; a foole in his throate; and a knaue in his whole body. Simple men may write againſt other, or pleade for themſelues: but they cannot confute cuttingly, like a hackſter of Queen-Hith, or bellow luſtely, like the foreman of the Heard. I goe not about to diſcouer an Aſſe in an Oxes hide: hee needeth no other to pull him by the famous eares, that is ſo haſty to deſcry, and ſo buſy to beſtirre his wiſeſt partes: but what a notable Aſſe indeede was I, that ſought the winges of a mounting Pegaſus, or

Digitized by Google

a ſtying Phenix, where I found the head, & feete of a braying creature? Some promiſes, are desperate debtes: and many threatninges, empty cloudes; or rather armies fighting in the ayre, terrible viſions. Simplicity cannot dubble: and plaine dealing will not diſſemble. I looked either for a fine-witted man, as quicke as quick-ſiluer, that with a nimble dexterity of liuely conceite, and exquiſite ſecretaryſhip, would out-runne mee many hundred miles in the courſe of his dainty deuiſes; a delicate minion: or ſome terrible bombarder of tearmes, as wilde as wild-fire, that at the firſt flaſh of his fury, would leaue me thunder-ſtricken vpon the ground, or at the laſt volley of his outrage, would batter me to duſt, and aſhes. A redoubted aduerſary. But the trimme ſilke-worme, I looked for, (as it were in a proper contempt of common fineneſſe) prooueth but a ſilly glow-woorme: and the dreadfull enginer of phraſes, in ſteede of thunderboltes, ſhooteth nothing but dogboltes, and catboltes, and the homelieſt boltes of rude folly. Such arrant confuting ſtuffe, as neuer print ſaw compiled together, till maiſter Villany became an Autor; and Sir Naſh a gentleman. Printers, take hede how ye play the Heralds: ſome luſty gentlemen of the maker, can no ſooner bare a Gooſequill, or a Woodcockes feather in their ſhield, but they / are like the renowmed Lobbelinus, when hee

Digitized by Google

had gotten a new coate: and take vpon them, without pitty, or mercy, like the onely Lordes of the field. If euer Eſquier raued with conceit of his new Armes, it is Danters gentleman: that mightily deſpiſeth, whatſoeuer hee beholdeth from the high turret of his creaſt, and cranckly ſpitteth vppon the heads of ſome, that were not greatly acquaynted with ſuch familiar enterteinement. His beſt frende, be his Iudge: and I appeale to my worſt ennemy, whether he neuer read a more peſtilent example of proſtituted Impudency? Were hee not a kinſeman of the foreſayd viper, a Dog in malice, a Calfe in witt, an Oxe in learning, and an Aſſe in diſcretion: (time ſhall cronicle him, as he is:) was it poſſible, that any mã ſhould haue beſtowed ſome broad, and loud tearmes, as he hath done? Who could abide it, without actuall reuenge, but hee, that enterteineth ſpite with a ſmile, maketh a paſtime of Straunge Newes; turneth choler into ſanguine, vineger into wine, vexation into ſport, and hath a ſalue for a greater ſore.

Come young Sophiſters, you that affecte raylinge in your diſputations, and with a clamorous howte would ſet the Philoſophy ſchooles *non plus*: come olde cutters, you that vſe to make dowty frayes in the ſtreetes, and would hack-it terribly: come hee- and ſhee-ſcoldes, you that loue to pleade-it-out

Digitized by Google

inuincibly at the barre of the dunghill, & will rather loose your liues, then the last word: come busy commotioners, you that carry a world of quarrelous wits, and mutinous tounges in your heads: come most-redowted Momus, you that will sternely keepe heauen, and earth in awe: come running heads, and giddy pennes of all humours, you that daunce attendance vpon oddest fashions: and learne a perfect methode, to passe other, and to excell your / selues: such a new-deuised modell, as neuer saw Sun before, & may make the gayest mold of antiquity to blush. Old Archilochus, and Theon, were but botchers in their rayling faculty: Stesichorus, but a grose bungler: Aristarchus but a curious, and nice foole: Aristophanes and Lucian but merry iesters: Ibis against Ouid; Meuius against Horace; Carbilius Pictor against Virgill; Lauinius against Terence; Crateua against Euripides; Zoilus against Homer, but ranke sowters. Salust did but dally with Tully: Demades but toy with Demosthenes: Pericles but sporte with Thucydides, and so foorth. For examples are infinite: and no exercise more auncient, then Iambiques amongst Poetes; Inuectiues amongst Oratours; Confutations amongst Philosophers; Satyres amongst Carpers; Libels amongst factioners; Pasquils amongst Malcontentes; and quarrells amongst all. But the Olde Asse was

Digitized by Google

an Infante in Witt, and a Grammer Scholler in Arte: Lucians Rhetor, neuer ſo brauely furniſhed, will be heard with an Eccho: Iulian will rattle Christendome: Arrius will ſhake the Church: Macchiauell will yerke the Commonwealth: Vnico Aretino will ſcourge Princes: and heere is a luſty ladd of the Caſtell, that will binde Beares, and ride golden Aſſes to death. Were the pith of courage loſt, it might be founde in his penne: or were the marrow of conceite to ſeeke, where ſhould witt looke for witt, but in his Inckebottle? Arte was a Dunſe, till Hee was a writer: and the quickeſt Confuter, a drowſy dreamer, till he put a life into the dead quill, & a flye into the woodden boxe of forlorne Pandora. A pointe for the Satyriſt, whoſe conceite is not a Ruffian in folio: and a figg for the Confuter, that is not a Swaſhbucler with his pen. Old whimwhams haue plodded on, long enough: freſh inuention from the tapp, muſt / haue his friſkes, & careers an other while: and what comparable to this ſpowte of yarking elo quence? Giue me the fellow, that is as Peereleſſe, as Pennyleſſe; and can oppoſe all the Libraries in Poules Churchyard, with one wonderfull work of Supererogation; ſuch an vnmatcheable peece of Learning, as no bookes can counteruaile, but his owne; the onely recordes of the ſingularities of this age. Did I ſpeake at a venture. I might

Digitized by Google

deceiue, and be deceiued: but where Experience is a witneſſe, and iudgement the Iudge, I hope the errour will not be vnreaſonably great.

There was a time, when I floted in a ſea of encountring waues; and deuoured many famous confutations, with an eager, and inſatiable appetite: eſpecially Ariſtotle againſt Plato, and the old Philoſophers: diuers excellent Platoniſtes, indued with rare, & diuine wittes, (of whome elſewhere at large,) Iuſtinus Martyr, Philoponus, Valla, Viues, Ramus, againſt Ariſtotle: oh but the great maiſter of the ſchooles, and high Chauncellour of Vniuerſities, could not want pregnant defence: Perionius, Gallandius, Carpentarius, Sceggius, Lieblerus againſt Ramus: what? hath the royall Profeſſour of Eloquence, and Philoſophy, no fauourites? Talæus, Oſſatus, Freigius, Minos, Rodingus, Scribonius, for Ramus againſt them; and ſo foorth, in that hott contradictory courſe of Logique, and Philoſophy. But alas ſilly men, ſimple Ariſtotle, more ſimple Ramus, moſt ſimple the reſt, either ye neuer knew, what a ſharpe-edged, & cutting Confutation meant: or the date of your ſtale oppoſitions is expired; and a new-found land of confuting commodities diſcouered, by this braue Columbus of tearmes, and this onely marchant venturer of quarrels; that detecteth new Indies of Inuention, & hath the winds of Æolus

Digitized by Google

at commaundement. Happy, you flourishinge youthes, / that follow his incomparable learned steps: and vnhappy we old Dunses, that wanted such a worthy President of all nimble and liuely dexterities. What should I appeale infinite other to their perpetuall shame: or summon such, and such to their foule disgrace? Erasmus in Latine, and Sir Thomas More in English, were supposed fine, and pleasant Confuters in their time, and were accordingly embraced of the forwardest and trimmest wittes: but alacke how vnlike this dainty minion? Agrippa was reputed a gyant in confutation; a demi-god in omnisufficiency of knowledge; a diuell in the practise of horrible Artes: oh, but Agrippa was an vrcheon, Copernicus a shrimpe, Cardan a puppy, Scaliger a baby, Paracelsus a scab, Erastus a patch, Sigonius a toy, Cuiacius a bable to this Termagant; that fighteth not with simple wordes, but with dubble swordes: not with the trickling water of Helicon, but with piercing Aqua fortis: not with the sorry powder of Experience, but with terrible gunpowder: not with the small shott of contention, but with the maine ordinaunce of fury. For breuity I ouerskip many notable men, and valorous Confuters in their seuerall vaines: had not affection otherwhiles swinged their reason, where reason should haue swayed their affection. But Partiality, was euer

Digitized by Google

the buſieſt Actour; and Paſſion, the whotteſt Confuter: whatſoeuer plauſible cauſe otherwiſe pretended: and hee is rather to bee eſteemed an Angell, then a man, or a man of Heauen, not of Earth, that tendereth integrity in his hart; equity in his tounge; and reaſon in his penne. Fleſh, and bloud are fraile Creatures, and partiall discourſers: but he approacheth neereſt vnto God, & yeeldeth ſweeteſt fruite of a diuine diſpoſition, that is not tranſported with wrath, or any blinde paſſion, but guided with cleere, / and pure Reaſon, the ſoueraigne principle of ſound proceeding. It is not the Affirmatiue, or Negatiue of the writer, but the trueth of the matter written, that carryeth meat in the mouth, and victory in the hande. There is nothing ſo exceeding fooliſh, but hath beene defended by ſome wiſe man: nor any thinge ſo paſſinge wiſe, but hath bene confuted by ſome foole. Mans will, no ſafe rule, as Ariſtotle ſayth: good Homer ſometime ſleepeth: S. Auguſtine was not aſhamed of his retractations: S. Barnard ſaw not all thinges: and the beſt chart may eftſoones ouerthrow. He that taketh a Confutation in hand, muſt bringe the ſtandard of Iudgement with him; & make Wiſedome the moderatour of Wit. But I might aſwell haue ouerpaſſed the cenſure, as the perſons: & I haue to do with a party, that valueth both alike, and can phanſy no

Digitized by Google

Autor, but his owne phanſy. It is neyther reaſon, nor rime, nor witt, nor arte, nor any imitation, that hee regardeth: hee hath builded towers of Superarrogation in his owne head, and they muſt ſtand, whoſoeuer fall. Howbeit I cannot ouerſlipp ſome without manifeſt iniury, that deſerue to haue their names enrolled in the firſt rancke of valiant Confuters: worthy men, but ſubiect to imperfections, to errour, to mutuall reproofe; ſome more, ſome leſſe, as the manner is. Harding, and Iewell, were our Eſchines, and Demoſthenes: and ſcarſely any language in the Chriſtian world, hath affoorded a payre of aduerſaries, equiualent to Harding, and Iewell; two thundring and lightning Oratours in diuinity: but now at laſt infinitely ouermatched by this hideous thunderbolt in humanity; that hath the onely right tearmes inuectiue, and triumpheth ouer all the ſpirites of Contradiction. You that haue read Luther againſt the Pope: Sandolet, Longolius, Omphalius, Oſorius, againſt / Luther: Caluin againſt Sadolet: Melanchthon againſt Longolius: Sturmius againſt Omphalius: Haddon againſt Oſorius: Baldwin againſte Caluin: Beza againſte Baldwin: Eraſtus againſt Beza: Trauers againſt Eraſtus: Sutcliff againſt Trauers: and ſo foorth: (for there is no ende of endleſſe controuerſies: nor Bellarmine ſhall euer ſatisfye the Proteſtantes: nor Whittaker contente the Papiſtes:

Digitized by Google

nor Bancroft appeaſe the Preciſians: nor any reaſon pacify affection: nor any authority reſolue obſtinacy:) you that haue moſt diligently read theſe, and theſe, and ſundry other, reputed excellente in their kindes, caſt them all away, and read him alone: that can ſchoole them all in their tearmes inuectiue, and teacheth a new-found Arte of confuting, his all-onely Arte. Martin himſelfe but a meacocke: and Papp-hatchet himſelfe but a milkeſop to him: that inditeth with a penne of fury, and the incke of vengeance; and hath cart-loades of paperſhot, and chainſhot at commaundement. Tuſh, no man can blaſon his Armes, but himſelfe. Behold the mighty Champion, the dubble ſword-bearer, the redowtable fighter with both handes, that hath robbed William Conquerour of his ſurname, and in the very firſt page of his Straunge Newes, choppeth-off the head of foure Letters at a blow. Hee it is, that hath it rightly in him indeede; and can roundly doe the feate, with a witneſſe. Why, man, he is worth a thouſand of theſe pidlinge and driblinge Confuters, that ſitt all day buzzing vpon a blunt point, or two: and with much adoe driſle out as many ſentences in a weeke, as he will powre-downe in an howre. It is not long, ſince the goodlyeſt graces of the moſt-noble Common-wealthes vpon Earth, Eloquence in ſpeech, and

Digitized by Google

Ciuility in manners, arriued in theſe remote parts of the world: it was a happy reuolution of the / heauens, and worthy to be chronicled in an Engliſh Liuy, when Tiberis flowed into the Thames; Athens remoued to London; pure Italy, and fine Greece planted themſelues in rich England; Apollo with his delicate troupe of Muſes, forſooke his old mountaines, and riuers; and frequented a new Parnaſſus, and an other Helicon, nothinge inferiour to the olde, when they were moſt ſolemnely haunted of diuine wittes, that taught Rhetorique to ſpeake with applauſe, and Poetry to ſing with admiration. But euen ſince that flouriſhing transplantation of the daintieſt, and ſweeteſt lerning, that humanitie euer taſted; Arte did but ſpringe in ſuch, as Sir Iohn Cheeke, and M. Aſcham: & witt budd in ſuch, as Sir Phillip Sidney, & M. Spencer; which were but the violetes of March, or the Primeroſes of May: till the one begane to ſprowte in M. Robart Greene, as in a ſweating Impe of the euer-greene Laurell; the other to bloſſome in M. Pierce Pennileſſe, as in the riche garden of pore Adonis: both to growe to perfection, in M. Thomas Naſhe; whoſe prime is a harueſt, whoſe Arte a miſterie, whoſe witt a miracle, whoſe ſtile the onely life of the preſſe, and the very hart-blood of the Grape. There was a kind of ſmooth, and clenly, and neate, and fine elegancy

Digitized by Google

before: (proper men, handſome giftes:) but alacke, nothinge liuelie, and mightie, like the braue *vino de monte*, till his friſking penne began to playe the Sprite of the buttry, and to teach his mother-tongue ſuch luſty gambolds, as may make the gallanteſt French, Italian, or Spaniſh gagliards to bluſhe, for extreame ſhame of their ideot ſimplicitie. The difference of wittes is exceeding ſtraung, and almoſt incredible. Good lord, how may one man paſſe a thouſand, and a thouſande not compare with one? Arte may giue out precepts, and directoryes / in *communi forma:* but it is ſuperexcellent witt, that is the mother pearle of precious Inuention; and the goulden mine of gorgeous Elocution. Na, it is a certaine pregnant, and liuely thing without name, but a queint miſtery of mounting conceit, as it were a knacke of dexterity, or the nippitaty of the nappieſt grape, that infinitly ſurpaſſeth all the Inuention, and Elocution in the world; and will bunge Demoſthenes owne mouth with new-fangled figures of the right ſtampe, maugre all the thundering, and lightninge Periodes of his eloquenteſt orations, forlorne creatures. I haue had ſome prettie triall of the fineſt Tuſcaniſme in graine; and haue curiouſly obſerued the cunningeſt experiments, and braueſt complements of aſpiring emulation: but muſt geeue the bell of ſingularity, to the humorous witt; and the gar-

Digitized by Google

land of victory, to the *dominiering Eloquence*. I come not yet to the Praiſe of the olde Aſſe: it is young Apuleius, that feedeth vpon this glory: and hauing encloſed theſe rancke commons, to the proper vſe of himſelfe, & the capricious flocke; adopteth whom he liſteth, without exception: as Alexander the great, had a huge intention, to haue all men his ſubiectes, and all his ſubiectes called Alexanders. It was ſtrange newes for ſome, to be ſo aſſefied: and a worke of Supererogation for him, ſo bountifully to voutchſafe his golden name: the appropriate cogniſance of his noble ſtile. God-night poore Rhetorique of ſorry bookes: adieu good old Humanity: gentle Artes, and Liberall Sciences content your ſelues: Farewell my deere moothers, ſometime flooriſhing Vniuerſities: ſome that haue long continued your ſonnes in Nature; your apprentiſes in Arte; your ſeruauntes in Exerciſe; your louers in affection; and your vaſſalles in duety: muſt either take their leaues of their ſweeteſt freendes; or become / the ſlaues of that dominiering eloquence, that knoweth no Art but the cutting Arte; nor acknowledgeth any ſchoole, but the Curtiſan ſchoole. The reſt is pure naturall, or wondrous ſupernaturall. Would it were not an infectious bane, or an incroching pocke. Let me not bee miſtaken by ſiniſter conſtruction, that wreaſteth and wrigleth euery ſillable

Digitized by Google

to the worſt. I haue no reference to my ſelfe; but to my ſuperiours by incomparable degrees. To be a Ciceronian, is a flowting ſtocke: poore Homer, a wofull wight, may put his finger in a hole, or in his blind eye: the excellenteſt hiſtories, and woorthieſt Chronicles, (ineſtimable monumentes of wiſdome, and valour,) what but ſtale Antickes? the flowers, and fruites of delicate humanity, that were wont to be dainetily and tenderly conſerued, now preſerued with duſt, as it were with ſugar, and with hoare, as it were with hoony. That friſking wine, & that liuely knacke in the right capricious veine, the onely booke, that holdeth-out with a countenance; and will be heard, when woorme-toungued Oratours, duſt-footed Poets, and weatherwiſe hiſtorians ſhall not bee allowed a woord to caſt at a dogg. There is a fatall Period of whatſoeuer wee terme flouriſhinge: the worlde runneth on wheeles: and there muſt be a vent for all thinges. The Ciceronian may ſleepe, til the Scogginiſt hath plaid his part: One ſure Conny-catcher, woorth twenty Philoſophers: A phantaſticall rimeſter, more vendible, then the notableſt Mathematician: no profeſſion, to the faculty of rayling: all harſh, or obſcure, that tickleth not idle phantaſies with wanton dalliance, or ruffianly ieſtes. Robin Good-fellow the meeteſt Autor for Robin Hoodes Library: the

Digitized by Google

leſſe of Cambridge, or Oxforde, the fitter to compile woorkes of Supererogation: and wee that were ſimply trayned after the / Athenian, and Romane guiſe, muſt bee contente to make roome for roiſters, that know their place, and will take it. Titles, and tearmes are but woordes of courſe: the right fellow, that beareth a braine, can knocke twenty titles on the head, at a ſtroke; and with a iugling ſhift of that ſame inuincible knacke, defende himſelfe manfully at the Paper-barre. Though I be not greatly employed, yet my leiſure will ſcarſely ſerue, to moralize Fables of Beares, Apes, and Foxes: (for ſome men can giue a ſhrewd geſſe at a courtly allegory:) but where Lordes in expreſſe tearmes are magnifically contemned, Doctours in the ſame ſtile may be courageouſly confuted. Liberty of Tounge, and Pen, is no Bondman: nippitaty will not be tied to a poſt: there is a cap of mainetenaunce, called Impudency: and what ſay to him, that in a ſuperabundaunce of that ſame odd capricious humour, findeth *no ſuch want in England as of an Aretine, that might ſtrip theſe golden Aſſes out-of their gay trappinges, and after he had ridden them to death with rayling, leaue them on the dunghill for carrion?* A frolicke mind, and a braue ſpirite to bee employed with his ſtripping inſtrument, in ſupply of that onely want of a diuine Aretine, the

Digitized by Google

great rider of golden Aſſes. Were his penne as ſupererogatory a woorkeman, as his harte; or his lines ſuch tranſcendentes, as his thoughtes: Lord, what an egregious Aretine ſhould we ſhortly haue: how exceſſiuely exceeding Aretine himſelfe; that beſtowed the ſurmountingeſt amplifications at his pleaſure, and was a meere Hyperbole incarnate? Time may worke an accompliſhment of woonders: and his graund intentions ſeeme to prognoſticate no leſſe, then the vttermoſt poſſibilities of capacity, or fury extended: would God, or could the Diuell, giue him that vnmeaſurable allowance of witt, and Arte, that he extreamely / affecteth, and infinitely wanteth, there were no encounter, but of admiration, and honour. But it may very-well beſeeme me to conceale defectes: and I were beſt to let him runne out his iolly race, and to attende hys pleaſure at all aſſayes, for feare hee degrade mee, or call mee a Letter-monger. Oh, would that were the worſt. Gallant Gentlemen, did you euer ſee the blades of two brandiſhed ſwordes in the handes of a Fury? See them now: and Lo how the victorious Duelliſt ſtretcheth-out the armes of his Proweſſe, to runne vppon thoſe poore Letters with a maine carreere. *Aut nunc, aut nunquam:* now the deadly ſtroke muſt be ſtricken: now, now he will ſurely lay about him, like a luſty throſſher, and beate all to powder, that commeth

Digitized by Google

in the mighty ſwinge of his dubble flayle. But I know not what aſtoniſhing terror may bedimm my ſight: and peraduenture the one of thoſe vnlawfull weapons is no ſword, but a ſhaken firebrand in the hand of Alecto. All the worſe: and he twice wo-begon poore ſoule, that is at once aſſaulted with Fier, and Iron, the twoo vnmercifull inſtrumentes of Mars enraged. God ſhield quiet men from the handes of ſuch cruell Confuters: whoſe argumentes are ſwoordes; whoſe ſentences, murthering bullets; whoſe phraſes, croſbarres; whoſe tearmes no leſſe, then ſerpentine powder; whoſe very breath, the fier of the match: all exceedingly fearefull, ſaue his footinge, which may haply giue him the ſlipp. Hee that ſtandeth vppon a wheele, let him beware he fall not. I haue heard of ſome feate Stratagems, as ſly, as the ſlyeſt in Frontine, or Polyen: & could tell you a pretty Tale of a ſlippery grounde, that woulde make ſome bodies eares glow: but hee that reuealeth the ſecrete of his owne aduauntage, may haue ſcope enough to beſhrew himſelfe. The Ægyptian Mercury would prouide / to plant his foote vpon a ſquare; and his Image in Athens was quadrangular, whatſoeuer was the figure of his hatt: and although he were ſometime a Ball of Fortune, (who can aſſure himſelfe of Fortune?) yet was he neuer a wheele of folly, or an eele of Ely. The glibbeſt tunge muſt

Digitized by Google

conſult with his witt; & the roundeſt head with his feete: or peraduenture hee will not greatly thanke his tickle deuiſe. The Wheelewright may bee as honeſt a man, as the Cutler: the Drawer, as the Cutter: the Deuiſer, as the Printer: the worſt of the ſix, as the Autor: but ſome tooles are falſe Prophets; and ſome ſhoppes fuller of ſophiſtry, then Ariſtotles Elenches, and if neuer any witty deuiſer did ſuttelly vndermine himſelfe, good enough. I can tell you, the Wheele was an auncient Hieroglyphique of the moſt-conning Ægyptians; & figured none of their higheſt myſteries of triumph, or glory. But when againe I lift-vp mine eyes, and behold the glorious picture of that moſt-threatning Slaſſher: is it poſſible, ſo couragious a Confuter, ſhould bee leſſe terrible, then the Baſiliſke of Orus Apollo, that with his onely hiſſing, killed the poore ſnakes, his neighbours? can any Letters liue, that hee will ſlay? Were not Patience, or Submiſſion, or any courſe better, then farther diſcourſe? what fonder buſineſſe, then to troble the Printe with Pamphlets, that cannot poſſibly liue, whiles the Baſiliſke hiſſeth death? Was I woont to ieſt at Eldertons ballatinge; Gaſcoignes ſonnettinge; Greenes pamphletting; Martins libelling: Hollinſheads engroſing; ſome-bodies abridging; and whatchicaltes tranſlating: & ſhall I now become a ſcribling

Digitized by Google

Creature with fragmentes of ſhame, that might long ſithence haue beene a freſh writer with discourſes of applauſe? The very whole matter, what but a thinge of nothinge? the Methode, what but a hotchpot / for a gallimafry? by the one, or other, what hope of publike vſe, or priuate credite? Socrates minde could as lightly digeſt poiſon, as Mithridates boddy: and how eaſely haue the greateſt ſtomackes of all ages, or rather the valianteſt courages of the worlde, concocted the harſheſt, and rankeſt iniuries? Politique Philip, victorious Alexander, inuincible Scipio, triumphant Cæſar, happy Auguſtus, magnificent Titus, and the flower of the nobleſt mindes, that Immortality honoureth, with a ſweete facility gaue many bitter reprehenſions the ſlip, and finely ridd their handes of rougheſt obloquies. Philoſophy profeſſeth more: and the Philoſopher of Emperours, or rather the Emperour of Philoſophers, Marcus Antoninus, when hee deſerued beſt, could with a felicity heare the woorſt. Cherriſh an inward contentment in thy ſelfe, my minde: and outward occurrences, whome they will not make, ſhall not marre. It is as great a prayſe, to be diſcommended of the diſhoneſt, as to be commended of the vertuous: ſay, affirme, confirme, approoue, iuſtify what you can, the Captaine-ſcolde hath vowed the laſt word: none ſo bolde to aduenture any thinge, as he that

Digitized by Google

hath no good thinge to looſe: let him forge, or coyne, who will beleeue him? Lay-open his vanity, or foolery, who knoweth it not? yet who ſo eager to defende, or offende, with tooth, or nayle, by hooke or crooke? The Arte of figges, hadd euer a dapper witt, a deft conceite, a ſlicke forhead, a ſmugg countenaunce; a ſtinginge tongue; a nippinge hande; a bytinge penne; and a bottomleſſe pitt of Inuention, ſtoared with neuer-fayling ſhiftes of counterfeite cranckes: and my betters by many degrees, haue bene faine to bee the Godſonnes of young Apuleius. Diuers excellente men haue prayſed the old Aſſe: giue the young Aſſe leaue to praiſe himſelfe, / and to practiſe his minion Rhetorique vppon other. There is no dealinge, where there is no healinge. To ſtriue with dirt, is filthy: to play with edged tooles, daungerous: to trie maſteries with a deſperate aduerſary, hazardous: to encounter Demoſthenes Viper, or Apolloes Baſiliſke, deadly. To intende your owne intentions with an inuiolable conſtancy, and to leuell continually at your owne determined ſcope, without reſpecte of extrauagant endes, or cumberſome interruptions: the beſt courſe of proceeding, and onely firme, cheerefull, gallant and happy reſolution. Euery by-way, that ſtrayeth or gaddeth from that direct Path, a wandring errour: and a perillous or threatninge by-way, a

Digitized by Google

forreſt of wilde beaſtes. Handle, touch not the ranckeling byle; and throw away the launcing inſtrument.

I could conceiue no leſſe, then thus, and thus, when I beganne firſt to ſuruiew that brauing Empreſe: and euer me thought, *Aut nunc, aut nunquam*, ſeemed to prognoſticate greate tempeſtes at hande, and euen ſuch valorous workes of Supererogation, as would make an employed man of Florence, or Venice, to breake day with any other important buſineſſe of ſtate, or traffique. I went on, & on, ſtill, and ſtill loking for thoſe preſaged woondermentes: & thought it Platoes great yeare, till I hadd runne-thorough the armed pikes, and felte the whole dinte of the two vengeable vnlawfull weapons. But I beleeue, neuer poore man found his Imagination ſo hugely mocked, as this cõfuting Iugler cooſened my expectation without meaſure: as if his whole drift had bene nothinge elſe, but with a pleaſurable Comedy, or a mad Stratagem, (like thoſe of Bacchus, and Pan) queintelye deuiſed to defeate the opinion of his credulous reader, and to ſurpriſe ſimple minds with a moſt vnlikely / euent. A fine peece of conueiance in ſome pageantes: and a braue deſeigne in fitt place. Arte knoweth the pageants: and pollicy the place. In erneſt, I expected nether an Oratour of the Stewes: nor a

Digitized by Google

Poet of Bedlam: nor a knight of the alehowſe: nor a quean of the Cuckingſtole: nor a broker of baggage ſtuffe: nor a pedler of ſtraunge newes: nor anye baſe trumperye, or meane matters, when Pierce ſhould racke his witt, and Penniles ſtretch-out his courage, to the vttermoſt extent of his poſſibility. But without more circumlocution, pryde hath a fall: and as of a A Catt, ſo of Pierce himſelfe, howſoeuer inſpired, or enraged, you can haue but his ſkinne, puffed vp with winde, and bumbaſted with vanitye. Euen when he ſtryueth for life, to ſhewe himſelfe braueſt in the flaunt-aflaunt of his courage; and when a man would verily beleeue he ſhould nowe behold the ſtately perſonage of heroicall Eloquence face to face; or ſee ſuch an vnſeene Frame of the miracles of Arte, as might amaze the heauenly eye of Aſtronomy: holla ſir, the ſweete Spheres are not too prodigall of their ſoueraine influences. Pardon mee S. Fame. What the firſt pang of his diuine Furie, but notable Vanitie: what the ſecond fitte, but woorthy vanity? what the thirde career, but egregious vanity? what the glory of his ruffian Rhetorique, and curtiſan Philoſophy, but excellent villany? That, that is Pierces Supererogation: and were Penniles a perſon of any reckoning, as he is a man of notorious fame, that, that perhaps, in regard of the outragious ſingularity,

Digitized by Google

might be ſuppoſed a Tragicall, or Heroicall villany, if euer any villany were ſo intituled. The preſent conſideration of which ſingularity, occaſioneth me to bethinke me of One, that this other day very ſoberlie commended ſome extraordinary giftes in Naſhe: and when he / had grauelie maintayned, that in the reſolution of his conſcience, he was ſuch a fellowe, as ſome wayes had few fellowes; at laſt concluded ſomewhat more roundly.

Well, my maiſters, you may talke your pleaſures of Tom Naſh; who yet ſleepeth ſecure, not without preiudice to ſome, that might be more ielous of their name: but aſſure your ſelues, if M. Penniles had not bene deepely plunged in a profound extaſie of knauery, M. Pierce had neuer written that famous worke of Supererogation, that now ſtayneth all the bookes in Paules-churchyard, and ſetteth both the vniuerſities to ſchoole. Till I ſee your fineſt humanitie beſtow ſuch a liberall exhibition of conceit, and courage, vpon your neateſt wittes; pardon me though I prefer one ſmart Pamflet of knauery, before ten blundring volumes of the nine Muſes. Dreaming, and ſmoke amount alike: Life is a gaming, a iugling, a ſcoulding, a lawing, a ſkirmiſhing, a warre; a Comedie, a Tragedy: the ſturring witt, a quinteſſence of quickſiluer; and there is noe dead fleſhe in affection, or courage. You may diſcourſe of Hermes aſcending ſpirit; of Orpheus enchãting

Digitized by Google

harpe; of Homers diuine furie; of Tyrtæus enraging trumpet; of Pericles bounſinge thunderclaps; of Platos enthuſiaſticall rauiſhment; and I wott not what maruelous egges in mooneſhine: but a flye for all your flying ſpeculations, when one good fellow with his odd ieſtes, or one madd knaue with his awke hibber-gibber, is able to putt downe twentye of your ſmuggeſt artificiall men, that ſimper it ſo nicely, and coylie in their curious pointes. Try, whē you meane to be diſgraced: & neuer giue me credit, if Sanguine witt putt not Melancholy Arte to bedd. I had almoſt ſaid, all the figures of Rhetorique muſt abate me an ace of Pierces Supererogation: and Penniles hath a certayne nimble and climbinge reach of Inuention, as good as a long pole, and a hooke, that neuer fayleth at a pinch. It were vnnaturall, as the ſweete Emperour, Marcus Antoninus ſaid, that the fig-tree ſhould euer want iuice.| You that purpoſe with great ſummes of ſtuddy, & candles to purchaſe the worſhipfull names of Dunſes, & Dodipoles, may cloſely ſitt, or ſokingly ly at your bookes: but you that intende to be fine companionable gentlemen, ſmirkinge wittes, and whipſters in the world, betake yee timely to the liuely practis of the minion profeſſion, and enure your Mercuriall fingers to frame ſemblable workes of Supererogation. Certes other rules are fopperies: and they that will ſeeke out the Archmiſtery of the buſieſt Moderniſtes, ſhall

Digitized by Google

find it nether more, nor lesse, then a certayne pragmaticall secret, called Villany, the verie science of sciences, and the Familiar Spirit of Pierces Supererogation. Coosen not your selues with the gay-nothings of children, & schollers: no priuitie of learning, or inspiration of witt, or reuelation of misteryes, or Arte Notory, counteruayleable with Pierces Supererogation: which hauing none of them, hath them all, and can make them all Asses at his pleasure. The Book-woorme was neuer but a pick-goose: it is the Multiplying spirit, not of the Alchimist, but of the villanist, that knocketh the naile one the head, and spurreth cutt farther in a day, then the quickest Artist in a weeke. Whiles other are reading, wryting, conferring, arguing, discoursing, experimẽting, platforminge, musing, buzzing, or I know nct what: that is the spirrit, that with a woondrous dexterity shapeth exquisite workes, and atchieueth puissant exploites of Supererogation. O my good frends, as ye loue the sweete world, or tender your deare selues, be not vnmindfull what is good for the aduauncemente of your commendable partes. All is nothing without aduancement. Though my experiẽce be a Cipher in these causes, yet hauing studiously perused the newe Arte-notory, that is, the foresaid supererogation; and hauing shaken so many learned asses by the eares, as it were by the hands: I could say no lesse, and might think more.

Digitized by Google

Something elſe was vttered the ſame time by the ſame Gentleman, aſwell concerning the preſent ſtate of France, which / he termed the moſt vnchriſtian kingdome of the moſt chriſtian kinge; as touching certaine other newes of I wott not what dependence: but my minde was running on my halfpeny, and my head ſo full of the foreſaid round diſcourſe, that my hand was neuer quyet, vntill I had altered the tytle of this Pamphlet, and newlie chriſtened it *Pierces Supererogation:* aſwell in remembrance of the ſaid discourſe, as in honour of the appropriate vertues of *Pierce* himſelfe; who aboue all the writers that euer I knew, ſhall go for my money, where the curranteſt forgery, impudency, arrogancy, phantaſticalitie, vanity; and great ſtore of little diſcretion may go for payment; and the filthieſt corruption of abhominable villany paſſe vnlaunced. His other miraculous perfections are ſtill in abeyance: and his monſtrous excellencyes in the predicament of Chimera. The birde of Arabia is longe in hatchinge: and mightye workes of Supererogation are not plotted, & accompliſhed attonce. It is pittie for ſo hyperbolicall a conceite, ouer-hawty for the ſurmounting rage of Taſſo in his furious agony, ſhould be humbled with ſo diminitiue a witt; baſe enough for Elderton, and the riffe-raffe of the ſcribling raſcality. I haue

Digitized by Google

heard of many diſparagementes in felowſhip: but neuer ſawe ſo great Impudency married to ſo little witt; or ſo huge preſumption allyed to ſo petty performance. I muſt not paint, though hee dawbe. Pontan decipher thy vauntinge Alopantius Auſimarchides anew: and Terence diſplay thy boaſtinge Thraſo anew: and Plautus addreſſe thy vaine-glorious Pyrgopolinices anew: heere is a bratt of Arrogancy, a goſling of the Printing-houſe, that can teach your braggardes to play their partes in the Printe of woonder, & to exploit redowtable workes of Supererogation; ſuch as neuer were atchieued in Latin, or / Greeke. Which deſerue to bee looked-for with ſuch a longing expectation, as the Iewes looke for their kingly Meſſias: or as I looke for Agrippas dreadfull Pyromachy: for Cardans multiplied matter, that ſhall delude the force of the Canon: for Acontius perfect Arte of fortifieng little townes againſt the greateſt Battery: for the Iliades of all Courtly Stratagems, that Antony Riccobonus magnifically promiſeth: for his vniuerſall Repertory of all Hiſtories, contayning the memorable actes of all ages, all places, and all perſons: for the new Calepine of all learned, and vulgar languages, written, or ſpoken, whereof a loud rumour was lately publiſhed at Baſill: for a generall Pandectes of the

Digitized by Google

Lawes, and ſtatutes of all nations, and commonwealthes in the worlde, largely promiſed by Doctor Peter Gregorius, but compendiouſly perfourmed in his *Syntagma Iuris vniuerſi:* for ſundry ſuch famous volumes of hugy miracles in the cloudes. Do not ſuch Arch-woondermentes of Supernaturall furniture, deſerue arch-expectation? What ſhould the Sonnes of Arte, dreame of the Philoſophers Stone, that like Midas, turneth into golde, whatſoeuer it toucheth: or of the ſoueraine, and diuine Quinteſſence, that like Eſculapius reſtoreth health to ſickneſſe; like Medea, youth to Olde-age; like Apollonius, life to death? No Philoſophers Stone, or ſoueraine Quinteſſence, howſoeuer precioufly precious, equiualent to ſuch diuine woorkes of ſupererogation. O high-minded Pierce, hadd the traine of your woordes, and ſentences bene aunſwearable to the retinue of your bragges, and threates, or the robes of your apparaunce in perſon, ſuteable to the weedes of your oſtentation in tearmes: I would ſurely haue beene the firſt, that ſhould haue proclaimed you, the moſt-ſinguler Secretary of this language, and / the heauenlieſt creature vnder the Spheres. Sweete M. Aſcham, that was a flowing ſpring of humanity, and worthy Sir Phillip Sidney, that was a floriſhing ſpring of nobility, muſt haue pardoned me: I would directly haue diſcharged

Digitized by Google

my conſcience. But you muſt giue plaine men leaue to vtter their opinion without courtinge: I honor high heads, that ſtand vpon low feet; & haue no great affection to the gay fellowes, that build vp with their clãbring hartes, and pull downe with their vntoward hands. Giue me the man that is meeke in ſpirit, lofty in zeale: ſimple in preſumption, gallant in endeuour: poore in profeſſion, riche in performance. Some ſuch I knowe, and all ſuch I value highly. They glory not of the golden Stone, or the youthfull Quinteſſence: but Induſtrie is their goulden Stone; Action their youthfull Quinteſſence; and Valour their diuine worke of Supererogation. Euerye one may thinke as he liſteth; & ſpeake as he findeth occaſion: but in my fancy, they are ſimply the ſimpleſt fellows of al other, that boaſt they will exploite miracles, & come ſhort in ordinarie reckonings. Great matters are no woonders, when they are menaced, or promiſed with big othes: and ſmall thinges are maruels, when they are not expected, or ſuſpected. I wondred to heare, that Kelly had gotten the Golden Fliece, and by vertue thereof was ſodenly aduaunced into ſo honorable reputation with the Emperours maieſtye; but would haue woondred more, to haue ſeene a woorke of Supererogation from Naſhe: whoſe witt muſt not enter the liſtes of compariſon

Digitized by Google

with Kelleyes Alchimy: howſoeuer he would ſeeme to haue the Greene Lion, and the Flying Eagle in a boxe. But Kelley will bidd him looke to the ſwolne Toade, & the daunſing Foole. Kelly knoweth his *Lutum Sapientiæ*, and vſeth his termes of Arte. Silence / is a great miſterye: and lowde wordes but a Coweherds horne. He that breedeth mountaynes of hope, and with much adoe begetteth a molehill (ſhall I tell him a newe tale in ould Ingliſhe?) beginneth like a mightie Oxe, & endeth like a ſory Aſſe. To atchieue it without oſtentation is a notable prayſe: but to vaunt it without atcheuement, or to threaten it without effecte; is but a dubble-proofe of a ſimple witt. Execution ſheweth the hability of the man: preſumption bewraieth the vanitie of the mind. The Sunne ſayth not; I will thus, and thus diſplaye my glorious beames, but ſhineth indeede: the ſpringe braggeth not of gallant flowers, but floriſheth indeede: the Harueſt boaſteth not of plentifull fruit, but fructifieth indeede. Æſops fellowes being aſked, what they could doe, anſwered they could doe any thing; but Æſope making a ſmall ſhowe, could doe much indeede: the Greeke Sophiſters knowing nothinge in compariſon, (knowledge is a dry water) profeſſed a ſkill in all thinges; but Socrates knowing in a manner all things, (Socrates was a ſpringing

Digitized by Google

rocke) profeſſed a ſkill in nothinge : Lullius, and his ſectaryes, haue the ſignet of Hermes, and the admirable Arte of diſputinge infinitly *de omni ſcibili;* but Agrippa, one of the vniuerſalleſt ſchollars, that Europe hath yeelded, and ſuch a one, as ſome learned men of Germany, France, & Italie, intituled The Omniſcious Doctour, Socraticallie declameth againſt the vanitye of ſciences, and for my comforte penneth the Apology of the Aſſe. Neuer any of theſe prating vagabundes had the vertuous Elixir, or other important ſecret: (yet who ſuch monarches for Phiſique, Chirurgery, Spagirique, Aſtrology, Palmaſtry, naturall & ſupernaturall Magique, Necromancy, Familiar-ſpiritſhipp, and all profound cunninge, as ſome of theſe arrant Impoſtours?) / hee is a Pythagorean, and a cloſe fellow of his tongue, & pen, that hath the right *magiſterium* indeede; and can diſpatch with the finger of Art, that they promis with the mouth of coſenage. They that vaunt, do it not; & they that pretend leaſt, accompliſh moſt. High-ſpirited Pierce doe it indeede, that thou crakeſt in vaine; and I will honour thy worke, that ſcorne thy worde. When there was no neede, thy breath was the mouth of Ætna; & like a Cyclops, thou didſt forge thunder in Mongibello: now the warringe Planet was expected in perſon, and the Fiery Trigon ſeemed to giue the Alarme; *thou*

Digitized by Google

talkeſt of Cattes meate and Dogges meate enough: and wilt try it out by the teeth at the ſigne of the Dogs-head in the pot. Oh, what a chatering Monky is here: & oh what a dog-fly, is the dog-ſtarr proued? Elderton would haue anſwered this geere out-of-cry: or had I the witt of Scoggin, I could ſay ſome thing to it: but I looked for Cattes meate in *aqua fortis*, & Dogs meat in Gunpowder; & can no ſkill of theſe termes, ſteeped in thy mothers gutter, & thy fathers kennel. Na, if you will needes ſtrike it as dead as a dore naile; and run vpon me with the blade of Cattes meate, & the fierbrond of Dogges meate: I haue doone. Or in caſe your meaning be, as you ſtoutely proteſt, to trounce me after twenty in the hundred, *and to haue about with me, with two ſtaues, and a pyke,* like a tall fellowe of Cracouia: there is no dealing for ſhort weapons. Young Martin was an ould hackſter: & had you plaid your maiſters prizes in his time, he peraduenture durſte haue looked thoſe two ſtaues in the face, and would haue deſired that pike of ſome more acquaintance: but Truce keepe me out of his handes, that fighteth furiouſly with two ſtaues of Cattes meate and a pyke of Dogges meate: and is reſolutely bente, the beſt blood / of the brothers ſhall pledge him in vineger. Happy, it is noe worſe, then vineger; a good ſawce for Cattes meate, and Dogges meate.

Digitized by Google

Gentlemen, you that thinke prommiſſe a bonde, and vſe to performe more, then you threaten; neuer beleeue Braggadocio againe for his ſake. When he hath done his beſt, and his worſt: truſt me, or credit your owne eies, his beſt Beſt is but Cattes meate, & his worſt Worſt but Doggs meate enough. What ſhould I goe circuiting about the buſhe? He taketh the ſhorteſt cutt to the wood, and diſpatcheth all controuerſies in a fewe ſignificant termes: not thoſe of Gunpowder, which would aſke ſome charging, and diſcharging: but theſe of dogges-meat, which are vp with a vomit. He that is not ſo little, as the third Cato from heauen, or the eight wiſeman vpon earth, may ſpeake with authority; and chriſten me a *Dunſe, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a gooſe-cappe, an aſſe*, and I wot not what, as filthy, as filthy may be. Dogged Impudēcy hath his proper Idiotiſme; & very clarkly ſchooleth the eares of Modeſtie, to ſpell, Fa-fe-fi-fo-fu. Simple wittes would be dealt playnly withall: I ſtand not vpon coye or nice poyntes; but am one of thoſe, that would gladlie learne their owne imperfections, errours, and follies, *in ſpeciallisſima ſpecie:* Be it knowne vnto all men by theſe preſentes, that Thomas Naſhe, from the top of his witte looking downe vpon ſimple creatures, calleth Gabriell Haruey a Dunſe, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a gooſe-capp, an aſſe, and ſoe

Digitized by Google

fourth: (for ſome of the reſidue, is not to be ſpoken but with his owne manerly mouth): but the wiſe man in printe, ſhould haue doone well in his learned Confutation, to haue ſhewed particulerlie, which woords in my Letters, were the wordes of a Dunſe: which Sentences, the ſentences of a foole: which Arguments, the arguments of / an Ideot: which Opinions, the opinions of a dolt: which Iudgements, the iudgements of a gooſe-cap: which Concluſions, the concluſions of an Aſſe. Eyther this wold be dun, (for I ſuppoſe, he would be loth to proue ſome Aſſes, that in fauour haue written otherwiſe, and in reaſon are to verify their owne teſtimonies): or he muſt be fayne himſelſe, to eate his owne Cattes-meate, & Dogges-meat: and ſwallow-downe a Dunſe, a foole, an ideot, a dolt, a gooſe-cap, an aſſe in his owne throate; the proper caſe of his filthieſt excrements, and the ſinke of the famous raſcal; that had rather be a Poulcatt with a ſtinking ſtur, then a muſk-cat with gratious fauor. Pardon me gentle Ciuilitie: if I did not tender you, & diſclame impudency, I could do him ſome peece of right; & ſhew him his well fauored face in a Criſtall, as true as Gaſcoignes ſteele-glas. But *truſt him not for a dodkin* (it is his owne requeſt) *if euer I did my Doctors Actes:* which a thowſand heard in Oxforde; and ſome knew to be done with as little premedita-

Digitized by Google

tion, as euer ſuch actes were done: (for I anſwered vpon the queſtions, that were giuen me by Doctor Cathedræ, but two dayes before; and read my Curſory Lecture with a dayes warning:) or if I be not *A Fawne-gueſt Meſſenger betweene M. Christopher Bird*, in whoſe company, I neuer dined, or ſupped theſe ſix yeares, *and M. Emmanuell Demetrius*, with whom I neuer dranke to this day. Other matters, touching *her Highneſſe affabilite toward Schollers*, (ſo her Maieſties fauour towards mee muſt bee interpreted:) the *Priuy watch-word of honourable men* in their Letters Commendatory, *euen in the higheſt degree of prayſing*, (ſo our high Chauncellours commendation muſt bee quallified:) Naſhes graue Cenſure of *Publicke Inuectiues, and Satyres*, (ſo Harueyes ſlight opinion of contentious, and ſeditious Libels muſt / be croſbitten:) his teſtimony of *Ciceroes conſolation ad Dolabellam*, which he will needes father vpon me in reproch, though his betters will neuer pen ſuch a peec of Latin, whoſoeuer wer the Stepp-Tully:) his deriſion of the moſt profitable, and valorous *Mathematical Arts*, (whoſe induſtrie hath atcheeued woonders of mightier puiſſance, then the labours of Hercules:) his contempt of *the worthieſt perſons* in euery faculty, (which he alwayes cenſureth as his punyes, and vnderlinges:) *his palpable Atheiſme, and drinkinge a cupp of Lammeſwool to the Lambe*

Digitized by Google

of God: his gibinge at *Heauen*, (the hauen, where my deceaſed brother is arriued,) with a deepe cut out-of his Gramer rules; *Aſtra petit diſertus:* the very ſtarres, are ſcarres, where he liſteth: and a hundred ſuch, and ſuch Particularities; that requier ſum larger Diſcourſe; ſhew him to be a youngman of the greeneſt ſpringe, as beardles in iudgement, as in face; and as Penniles in witt, as in purſe. It is the leaſt of his famous aduentures, that hee vndertaketh to be *Greenes aduocate:* as diuine Plato aſſayed to defend Socrates at the Bar: and I knowe not whether it be the leaſt of his dowtye exploites, that he ſalueth his frendes credit, as that excellent diſciple ſaued his maiſters life. He may declare his deere affection to his Paramour: or his pure honeſtye to the world; or his conſtant zeale to play the Diuels Oratour: but noe Apology of Greene, like *Greenes grotes-worth of witt:* and when Naſh will indeede accompliſh a worke of Supererogation, let him publiſh, Naſhes *Penniworth of Diſcretion.* If he be learneder, or wiſer then other, in ſo large an aſſiſe, as ſhould appeare by the reporte of his owne mouth; it is the better for him: but it were not amiſſe, he ſhould ſumtime looke-backe to the budget of Ignorance, and Folly, that hangeth behind him; as otherwhiles he condeſcendeth to glaunce / at the ſatchell of his grammar bookes. Calumny & her

Digitized by Google

coofen-german Impudency, wil not alwaies hould-out rubbers: and they neede not greatlie bragge of their harueft, that make Phantafie the roote, Vanity the ftalke, Follye the eare, Penury the cropp, and Shame the whole fubftance of their ftuddies. To be ouer-bould with one, or two, is fomething: to be fawcy with many, is much: to fpare fewe, or none, is odious: to be impudent with all, is intollerable. There were fayre playe enough, though foule play were debarred: but Boyes, fooles, and knaues, take all in fnuffe, when the variance might be debated in the language of Curtefie: and nothing but horfeplay will ferue, where the colt is difpofed to play the iade. Did I lift to perfecute him in his owne vaine, or were I not reftrained with refpectiue termes of diuine, and ciuill moderation: ô Aretin, how pleafurably might I canuas the bawling cur, in a toffing fheete of paper: or ô Gryfon, who could more eafilie difcouer a new Arte of riding a headftrong beafte? But that which Nafhe accounteth the brauery of his witt, and the dubble creaft of his ftyle, I am in difcretion to cut-of: and in modefty yeeld it his onely glorye, to haue the fowleft mouth, that I euer fawe, and the ftrongeft breath, that I euer fealt. When witty girding faileth, as it pitifully fayleth in euery page of that Superarrogatory worke: Lord, what odious baggage, what rafcal

Digitized by Google

ſtuffe, what villanous trumpery filleth-vpp the leafe: and howe egregiouſly would he playe the vengeable Sycophant, if the conueiance of his Arte, or witt, were in anye meaſure of proportion, correſpondent to his peſtilent ſtomacke? But in the felleſt fitt of his Furye, euen when he runneth vpon me with openeſt mouth, & his Spite like a poyſonous toade, ſwelleth in the full: as if ſome huge timpany / of witt would preſentlye poſſeſſe his braine; or ſome horrible Fiery Spright would flye in my face, and blaſt me to nothing: then good Dick Tarleton is dead, & nothing aliue but Cattes-meat, & Dogges-meat enough. Na, were it not, that hee hadd dealt politiquely, in prouiding himſelfe an autenticall ſuerty, or rather a mighty protectour at a pinch, ſuch a deuoted freend, and inſeparable companion, as Æneas was to Achates, Pylades to Oreſtes, Diomedes to Vlyſſes, Achilles to Patroclus, and Hercules to Theſeus: doubtleſſe he had beene vtterly vndone. Compare old, and new hiſtories, of farr, & neere countries: and you ſhall finde the late manner of *Sworne Brothers*, to be no new faſhion, but an auncient guiſe, and heroicall order; deuiſed for neceſſity, continued for ſecurity, and mainetayned for proffite, and pleaſure. In braueſt actions, in weightieſt negotiations, in hardeſt diſtreſſes, in how many caſes, One man, no-boddy; and a dayly frend, as neces-

Digitized by Google

ſary, as our dayly bread. No treaſure, more precious: no bonde, more indefeſible: no caſtle, more impregnable: no force, more inuincible: no trueth, more infallible: no element, more needefull; then an entire, & aſſured aſſociate; euer preſt, aſwell in calamity to comfort, or in aduerſity to relieue, as in proſperity to congratulate, or in aduauncemente to honour. Life is ſweet, but not without ſweete ſocietie: & an inward affectionate frend, (as it were *an other The ſame, or a ſecond Selfe,*) the very life of life, and the ſweet-harte of the hart. Naſhe is learned, & knoweth his Leripup. Where was Euryalus, there was Niſus: where Damon, there Pythias: where Scipio, there Lælius: where Apollonius, there Damides: where Proclus, there Archiadas: where Pyrocles, there Muſidorus: where Naſhe, there his Niſus, his Pythias, his Lælius, his Dami/des, his Archiadas, his Muſidorus; his indiuiſible companion, with whoſe puiſſant helpe hee conquereth, wherefoeuer he raungeth. Na, Homer not ſuch an author for Alexander: nor Xenophon for Scipio: nor Virgil for Auguſtus: nor Iuſtin for Marcus Aurelius: nor Liuy for Theodoſius Magnus: nor Cæſar for Selymus: nor Philip de Comines for Charles the fift: nor Macchiauell for ſome late princes: nor Aretin for ſome late Curteſans; as his Authour for him; the ſole authour of renowned victorie.

Digitized by Google

Maruel not, that Erasmus hath penned the Encomium of Folly; or that so many singular learned men haue laboured the commendation of the Asse: he it is, that is the godfather of writers, the superintendent of the presse, the muster-maister of innumerable bands, the Generall of the great feilde: hee, and Nashe will confute the world. And wher is the Ægles quill, that can sufficiently aduance the first spoiles of their new conquestes? Whist sory pen, and be aduised how thou presume aboue the highest pitch of thy possibility. Hee that hath christened so many notable authours; censured so many eloquent pennes; enrowled so many worthy garrisones; & encamped so many noble, and reuerend Lordes, may be bould with me. If I be an Asse, I haue company enough: and if I be no Asse, I haue fauour to be enstalled in such companye. The name will shortly grow in request, as it somtime florished in glorious Roome: and who then will not sue, to be free of that honorable Company? Whiles they are ridden, I desire not to be spared: when the hott-spurr is aweary with tyring them, he wil scarsly troble himself with a skin. Or if he do, I may chance acquaint him with a secret indistillation; He that drinketh Oyle of prickes, shall haue much adooe to voide syrup of roses; and he that eateth nettles for prouander, / hath a priuiledge to pisse vpon Lillyes

Digitized by Google

for litter. Poules wharfe honour the memorye of oulde Iohn Hefter, that would not ſticke with his frende for twentye ſuch experimentes; & would often tell me of *A Magiſtral Vnguent* for all ſores. Who knoweth not that Magiſtrall vnguent, knoweth nothing: and who hath that magiſtral vnguent, feareth no gunſhott. The Confuter meant to be famous, like Poggius, that altobe-aſſed Valla, Trapezuntius, and their defendantes, many learned Italians: or might haue giuen a geſſe at ſome poſſible afterclaps, as good as a prognoſtication of an after-winter. Though Pierce Penniles, for a ſpurt were a ranke rider, and like an arrant knight ouerran nations with a carreer; yet Thomas Naſhe might haue beene aduiſed, and in pollicy haue ſpared them, that in compaſſion fauoured him; and were vnfaynedlye ſory, to finde his miſerable eſtate, aſwell in his ſtyle, as in his purſe, and in his wit, as in his fortune. Some complexions haue much adooe to alter their nature: & Naſhe wil carrie a tache of Pierce to his graue, (we haue worſe prouerbes in engliſhe:) yet who ſeeith not, what apparent good, my Letters haue done him, that before ouercrowed all commers, and goers with like diſcretion, but nowe forſooth hath learned ſome fewe handſome termes of reſpecte, and verye manerly beclaweth a fewe, that he might the more

Digitized by Google

licentiouſly beſmeere one. S. Fame giue him ioye of his blacke, and his white chalke.

Who is not limed with ſome default; or who reddier to confeſſe his own imperfections, then miſelfe? but when in profeſſed hatred, like a mortal feudiſt, he hath vttered his very vttermoſt ſpite, & wholy diſgorged his rãcorous ſtomacke: yet can he not, ſo much as deuiſe any particular action of treſpas, or obiect any certaine vice againſt me, but onely / one greuous crime, called Pumps, & Pãtofles, (which indeede I haue worne, euer ſince I knewe Cambridge,) & his owne deereſt hart-root, Pride: which I proteſt before God, and man, my ſoule in indgment as much deteſteth, as my body in nature lotheth poyſon; or anything abhorreth his deadlye enemy, euen amongſt thoſe creatures, which are found fatally contrary by naturall Antipathy. It is not exceſſe, but defecte of pride, that hath broken the head of ſome mens preferment. Aſpiring mindes can ſoare aloft: and Selfe-conceit, with the countenaunce of Audacity, the tongue of Impudency, & the hand of Dexterity, preaſeth bouldly into the forwardeſt throng of the ſhouldring ranke: whiles Diſcretion hath leaſure to diſcourſe, whether ſomedeale of Modeſty were meeter for manye, that preſume aboue their condition; and ſome deale of Selfe-liking fitter for ſome, that haue fealt no greater want, then want

Digitized by Google

of Pride. It may ſeeme a rude diſpoſition, that ſorteth not with the quality of the age: & Pollicy deemeth that vertue a vice, that modeſty, ſimplicity, that reſolutenes, diſſolutenes, that conformeth not it ſelfe, with a ſupple & deft correſpõdence to the preſent time: but no ſuch oxe in my mind, as Tarquinius Superbus: no ſuch calfe, as Spurius Mælius: no ſuch colt, as Publius Clodius; no ſuch Ape, as Lucians Rhetorician, or the Diuels Oratour. Blind ambition, a noble bayarde: proud arrogancy, a goulden Aſſe: vaine conceit, a gaudy Peacocke: all brauery, that is not effectuall, a gay nothing. He vpbraideth me with his own good nature: but where ſuch an inſolent braggard, or ſuch a puffing thing, as himſelfe? that in magnifying his owne bable, & debaſing me, reuileth them, whoſe bookes, or pantofles he is not worthy to beare. If I be an Aſſe, what aſſes were thoſe curteous frendes, thoſe excellent learned men, / thoſe worſhipfull, & honorable perſonages, whoſe Letters of vndeſerued, but ſingular cõmendation may be ſhewen? What an aſſe was thiſelfe, whẽ thou didſt publiſh my praiſe amongſt the notableſt writers of this realme? or what an Aſſe art thiſelf, that in the ſpitefulleſt outrage of thy maddeſt Confutatiõ, doſt otherwhiles enterlace ſome remembrances of more account, then I can acknowledge without vanity, or deſier without ambition?

Digitized by Google

The truth is, I ſtande as little vpon others commendation, or mine owne titles, as any man in England whoſoeuer; if there be nothing els to ſolicite my cauſe: but being ſo ſhamefully and intollerably prouoked in the moſt villanous termes of reproch, I were indeede a notorious inſenſate aſſe, in caſe I ſhould eyther ſottiſhly neglect the reputation of ſoe worthy fauorers, or vtterly abandõ mine owne credit. Sweet Gentlemen, renowned knightes, and honorable Lordes, be not aſhamed of your Letters, vnprinted, or written: if I liue, ſeeing I muſt eyther liue in *tenebris* with obloquy, or in *luce* with proofe; by the leaue of God, I will prooue miſelfe no Aſſe. I ſpeake not onely to M. Bird, M. Spencer, or Monſieur Bodin, whom he nothinge regardeth: (yet I would his owne learning, or iudgmente were anye way matchable with the worſt of the three:) but amongſt a number of ſundrie other learned, and gallant Gentlemẽ, to M. Thomas Watſon, a notable Poet; to M. Thomas Hatcher, a rare Antiquary; to M. Daniel Rogers of the Court; to Doctor Griffin Floyd, the Queenes profeſſour of lawe at Oxforde; to Doctor Peter Baro a profeſſour of diuinity in Cambridge; to Doctor Bartholmew Clark, late Deane of the Arches; to Doctor William Lewen, Iudge of the prerogatiue Court; to Doctor Iohn Thomas Freigius, a famous writer

Cf Hallam, p 210

Digitized by Google

of Germany: to Sir Philip Sidney; to / M. Secretary Wilſon; to Sir Thomas Smith; to Sir Walter Mildmay; to milord the biſhop of Rocheſter; to milord Treaſurer; to milord the Earle of Leiceſter: Vnto whoſe worſhipfull and honorable fauours I haue bene exceedingly beholding for letters of extraordinary commendation; ſuch, as ſome of good experience haue doubted, whether they euer voutſafed the like vnto any of either vniuerſity. I beſeech God, I may deſerue the leaſt parte of their good opinion, eyther in effectuall proofe, or in dutifull thankefullneſſe: but how little ſoeuer I preſume of mine owne ſufficiency, (he that knoweth himſelfe, hath ſmal cauſe to conceiue any high hope of low meanes:) as in reaſon I was not to flatter miſelfe with their bountifull commendation: So in iudgement I am not to agreeue miſelfe with the odious detraction of this peſtilent libeller, or any like deſpiteous ſlanderer: but in patience am to digeſt the one with moderation, as in temperance I qualified the other with modeſty. Some would ſay, what is the peeuiſhe grudge of one beggarly rakehell, to ſo honorable liking of ſo many excellēt, & ſome ſingular mē? but god in heauē, teach me to take good by my aduerſaries inuectiue; and no harme by my fauourers approbation. It is neither the one, nor the other, that deſerueth euill, or well; but the thing it ſelfe, that edifieth;

Digitized by Google

without which, praiſe is ſmoke; and with which, diſpraiſe is fyer. Let me enioy that eſſential point: & hauke, or hunt, or fiſhe after praiſe, you that liſt. Many contumelious, and more glorious reports haue paſſed from Enemies, & Frends, without cauſe, or vpon ſmal occaſion: that is the onely infamy, that cannot acquit it ſelfe from guiltineſſe; & that the only honor, that is grounded vpõ deſert. Other winds of diffamation, want matter to vpholde it; and other ſhadowes of glory, lacke / a body to ſupport it. In vnhappineſſe they are happy, of whoſe bad amounteth good; & in happineſſe they vnhappy, whoſe good prooueth bad: as glory eftſoones followeth them, that fly from it, & flyeth from them, that followe it There is a Terme Probatory, that wil not ly: and commendations are neuer autenticall, vntill they bee ſigned with the ſeale of approoued Deſert, the only infallible Teſtimoniall. Deſert, (maugre Enuy, the companion of Vertue) Socrates highwaye to Honour; & the totall ſumme of Oſorius *De Gloria*. I will not enter into Macchiauels discourſes, Iouius Elogyes, Cardãs natiuities, Coſmopolites Dialogues, or later Hiſtories in dyuers languages: but ſome worthelye continue honorable, whom they make diſhonorable, & contrariwiſe. Reaſon hath an euen hande, and diſpenſeth to euerye one his right: Arte amplifieth, or extenu-

Digitized by Google

ateth at occaſion : the reſidue, is the liberality of the pen, or the poyſon of the inke : in Logique, Sophiſtrie ; in law, iniury ; in hiſtorie, a fable ; in diuinity, a lye. Horace, a ſharpe, and ſententious Poet, after his pithy manner, comprizeth much in fewe wordes :

Falſus honor iuuat, & mendax infamia terret,
Quem niſi mendacem, & mendoſum ?

For mine owne part, I am reaſonably reſolute both wayes, & ſtand affraide of phantaſticall discredit, as I eſteeme imaginatiue credit, or a contemplatiue banquett. It fitteth not with the profeſſion of a Philoſopher, or the conſtancie of a man, to carrye the minde of a childe, or an youth, or a woman, or a ſlaue, or a tyrant, or a beaſt. That reſteth not in my power, to reforme, or alter, I were very vnwiſe if I ſhould not endure with patience, mittigate with reaſon, & contemne with pleaſure. Onely I can be content in certain behoouefull reſpects, to yeeld a peece of a ſatisfaction vnto ſome, that / requier it in affectionate termes : and what honeſt minde, in caſe of mortalitie, hath not a care, how the poſterity may be informed of him ? Other reaſons I haue elſwhere aſſigned : and am here to preſent a vowe to Humilitie, in deteſtatiō of that, which my diſpoſition abhorreth.

Digitized by Google

As for his lewd ſuppoſals, & imputations of counterfait prayſes, without anye probability of circumſtance, or the leaſt ſuſpition, but in his owne vengeable malitious head, the common forge of peſtilent ſurmyzes, and arrant ſlaunders; they are like my impriſonment in the Fleete of his ſtrong Fantaſie, and doe but intimate his owne ſkill in falſifying of euidence, and ſuborning of witneſſes to his purpoſe: he muſeth, as he vſeth; & the goodwife her mother would neuer haue ſought her daughter in the Oouen, if herſelfe had not beene well acquainted with ſuch ſhiftes of cunninge conueiance. He was neuer a *non proficient* in good matters; and hath not ſtudied his fellowes Arte of Cunnycatching for nothinge. Examine the Printers gentle Preamble before the Supplication to the Diuell: and tell me in good ſooth, by the verdicte of the Tuchſtone, whether Pierce Penniles commende Pierce Penniles, or no; and whether that ſory praiſe of the Authour Thomas Naſhe, be not lothſome from the mouthe of the Printer Thomas Naſhe. In coniectural cauſes I am not to auouch any thinge; and I mentioned not anye ſuch ſuppoſition before: but the tenour of the ſtyle, & as it were the identitye of the phraſe, togither with this newe deſcant of his profound inſight into forgery, may after a ſort tel tales out of the tytle *De Secretis non reuelandis*;

Digitized by Google

& yeld a certain ſtrong ſauour of a vehement preſumption. There is pregnant euidence enough, though I leaue probable cõiectures, & violent preſumptions wher I found them. His Life daily feedeth his Stile; and his Stile notorioufly bewraieth his Life. But / what is that to me, or the world, howe Naſhe liueth; or howe the poore fellowe his father hath put him to his foiſting, and ſcribling ſhiftes; his onely *gloria patri*, when all is done. Rule thy deſperate infamous penne; & bee the ſonne of a mule, or the Printers Gentleman, or what thou wilt for me. If thou wilt needs deriue thy pettigree frõ the noble blood of the Kilprickes, and Childeberds, kinges of France: what commiſſion haue I to ſitt vpõ Genealogies, or to call nobilitie in queſtion? If thou beiſt diſpoſed to ſpeake as thou liueſt, & to liue like Tonoſconcoleros, the famous Babilonian king: in curteſy, or in pollicy forbeare one, that is not ouer-haſty to troble himſelfe with trobling other. What I haue heard credibly reported, I can yet be cõtent to ſmother in ſilence: & nether threaten thee with Tiburne, nor Newgate, nor Ouldgate, nor Counter, nor Fleete, nor any publique penance; but wiſhe thy amendment: and dare not be too-ſawcy with your good qualities, les[t] you confute my Maiſterſhip of Arte, as you haue done my Doctorſhip of Lawe. Neuer poore Doctorſhip

Digitized by Google

was ſo confuted. The beſt is, I dote not vpon it; and would rather be actually degraded, then any way diſparage the degree, or derogate from them, that are worthier of it. Reſt you quiet; and I will not onely not ſtruggle with you for a tytle; but offer here to renounce the whole aduantage of a late inquiſition, vpon a clamorous denunciation of S. Fame herſelfe: who preſumed ſhe might be as bould to play the blab with you, as you were to play the ſlouen with her. Or if your pen be ſo ranke, that it cannot ſtande vpon any ground, but the ſoile of Calumny, in the muck-yard of Impudency: or your tongue ſoe laxatiue, that it muſt vtterly vtter a great horrible deale more then all; whuiſt a while: and for your inſtruction, til ſome pregnanter / leſſons come abrode, I wil breefely tell you in your eare, A certaine familiar hiſtory, of more then one or two breakefaſtes, wherein ſome eight or nine eggs, & a pound of butter for your pore part, with Gods plenty of other victuals, & wine enough, powred-in by quartes, and pottels, was a ſcant pittance for an inuincible ſtomack, two houres before his ordinary. I haue readd of Apicius, and Epicures Philoſophy: but I perceaue you meane not to be accounted a Pythagorean, or a Stoique. What? gorge vpon gorge, egges vpon egges, & ſack vpō ſacke at theſe yeares? Berlady, Sir Kilpricke, you

Digitized by Google

muſt prouide for a hott kitchin againſte you growe ould; if you purpoſe to liue Doctor Pernes, or Doctor Kenols yeares. Such egging and whitling may happen bring you acquainted with the triumphant chariot of rotten egges; if you take not the better order in tyme, with one, or two of the ſeuē deadly ſinnes. I will not offend your ſtomacke with the nice and queint regiment of the dainty Platoniſtes, or pure Pythagoreans: fine Theurgy, too-gant and meager a doctrine for the Diuels Oratour: if the Arte Notory, cannot be gotten without faſting, and praying, muchgo-ditch-them that haue it: let phantaſticall, or ſuperſtitious Abſtinence, daunce in the aier, like Ariſtophanes clowdes, or Apuleius witches: your owne method of thoſe deadly ſinnes, be your Caſtell of Health. No remedy, you muſt be dieted; & lett-blood in the Cephalica veine of Aſſes, fooles, doltes, ideots, Dunſes, dodipoules, and ſo foorth infinitly: & neuer truſt me, if you be not as tame-tonged, and barren-witted, as other honeſt men of Lumbardy, & the Low-Cuntries. Tuſhe man, I ſee deeper into thee, then thou ſeeiſt into thyſelfe: thou haſt a ſuperficiall tange of ſome little ſomethinge, as good as nothing; and a runing witt, as fiſking as any fiſgig, but / as ſhallow as Trumpington foorde, and as ſlight as the newe workemanſhip of guegawes to pleaſe children, or

Digitized by Google

of toys to mocke apes, or of trinketts to conquer ſauages. Only in that ſingular veine of aſſes, thou art incomparable; and ſuch an egregious arrant foole-munger, as liueth not againe. She knew what ſhe ſaid, that intituled Pierce, the hoggeſhead of witt: Penniles, the toſpot of eloquence: & Naſhe, the verye inuentor of Aſſes. She it is, that muſt broach the barrell of thy friſking conceite, and canoniſe the Patriarke of newe writers.

I will not heere decipher thy vnprinted packet of bawdye, and filthy Rymes, in the naſtieſt kind: there is a fitter place for that diſcouery of thy fouleſt ſhame, & the whole ruffianiſme of thy brothell Muſe, if ſhe ſtill proſtitute her obſcene ballatts, and will needes be a young Curtiſan of ould knauery. Yet better a Confuter of Letters, then a counfounder of manners: and better the dogges-meate of Agrippa, or Cattes-meat of Poggius, then the ſwines-meate of Martial, or goates-meate of Arretine. Cannot an Italian ribald, vomit-out the infectious poyſon of the world, but an Inglifh horrel-lorrel muſt licke it vp for a reſtoratiue; and attempt to putrify gentle mindes, with the vileſt impoſtumes of lewde corruption? Phy on impure Ganimeds, Hermaphrodits, Neroniſts, Meſſaliniſts, Dodecomechaniſts, Capricians, Inuentours of newe, or reuiuers of old leacheries, and the whole brood of venereous Libertines, that

Digitized by Google

knowe no reaſon, but appetite, no Lawe but Luſte, no humanitie, but villanye, noe diuinity but Atheiſme. Such riotous, and inceſtuous humours would be launced, not feaſted: the Diuell is eloquent enough, to play his owne Oratour: his Damme an old bawde, wanteth not the broccage of a young Poet: Wanton ſprites / were alwayes buſie, & Duke Allocer on his luſtye Cocke-horſe, is a whot Familiar: the ſonnes of Adam, & the daughters of Eue, haue noe neede of the Serpentes carowſe to ſet them agogg: Sodome ſtill burneth; and although fier from heauen ſpare Gomorra, yet Gomorra ſtil conſumeth itſelfe. Euen amorous Sonnets, in the gallanteſt and ſweeteſt ciuill veine, are but daintyes of a pleaſurable witt, or iunkets of a wanton liuer, or buddes of an idle head: whatſoeuer ſprowteth farther, would be lopped. Petrarckes Inuention, is pure Loue it ſelfe; and Petrarckes Elocution, pure Bewty it ſelfe: His *Laura* was the Daphne of Apollo, not the Thiſbe of Pyramus: a delitious Sappho, not a laſciuious Lais; a ſauing Heſter, not a deſtroying Helena; a nimph of Diana, not a Curtiſan of Venus. Aretines muſe was an egregious bawd, & a haggiſhe witch of Theſſalia: but Petrarcks verſe, a fine loouer, that learneth of Mercury, to exerciſe his fayreſt giftes in a faire ſubiect; & teacheth Wit to be inamored

Digitized by Google

vpon Beautye: as Quickſiluer embraſeth gold; or as vertue affecteth honour; or as Aſtronomy gazeth vpon heauen; to make Arte more excellent by contemplation of excellenteſt Nature. Petrarck was a delicate man, and with an elegant iudgement gratiouſly confined Loue within the limits of Honour; Witt within the boundes of Diſcretion; Eloquence within the termes of Ciuility: as not many yeares ſithence, an Ingliſhe Petrarck did, a ſingular Gentleman, and a ſweete Poet; whoſe verſe ſingeth, as valour might ſpeake; and whoſe ditty, is an Image of the Sun, voutſafing to repreſent his glorious face in a clowde. What ſpeake I of one, or two Ingliſh Paragons? or what ſhould I blaſon the gallant, and braue meeters of Arioſto, and Taſſo, alwayes notable, ſometimes admirable? All the nobleſt Italian, French, and Spaniſh Poets, haue in their ſeuerall / Veines Petrarchiſed, that is, looued wittily, not groſely, liued ciuilly, not lewdly, and written deliciouſly, not wantonly. And it is no diſhonour for the daintyeſt, or diuineſt Muſe, to be his ſcholler, whom the amiableſt Inuention, and bewtifulleſt Elocution acknowledge their maſter. All poſterity honour Petrarck, that was the harmony of heauen; the lyfe of Poetry; the grace of Arte; a precious tablet of rare conceits, & a curious frame of exquiſite workemanſhip; / nothing but neate Witt, and re-

Digitized by Google

fined Eloquence. Were the amorous muſe of my enemy, ſuch a liuely Spring of ſweeteſt flowres, & ſuch a liuing Harueſt of ripeſt fruits; I would abandon other loues, to dote vpon that moſt-louely muſe, and would debaſe the Dyamant in compariſon of that moſt Dyamant muſe. But out-vpon ranke, & lothſome ribaldry, that putrifieth, where it ſhould purify, and preſumeth to deflowre the moſte floriſhinge wittes, with whom it conſorteth, eyther in familiarity, or by fauour. One Ouid was too-much for Roome; and one Greene too-much for London: but one Naſhe more intollerable then both: not bicauſe his witt is anye thinge comparable, but bicauſe his will is more outragious. Ferraria could ſcarcely brooke Manardus, a poyſonous Phiſitian: Mantua hardly beare Pomponatius, a poyſonous Philoſopher: Florence more hardly tollerate Macchiauel, a poyſonous politician: Venice moſt hardly endure Arretine, a poyſonous ribald: had they liued in abſolute Monarchies, they would haue ſeemed vtterly inſupportable. Germany, Denmarke, Sweden, Polony, Boemia, Hungary, Moſcouy, are no ſoiles of any ſuch wittes: but neither Fraunce, nor Spaine, nor Turky, nor any puiſſant kingdom, in one, or other Monarchy of the old, or new world, could euer abide any ſuch pernicious writers, deprauers of cõmon diſcipline.

Digitized by Google

Ingland, ſince it was Inglãd, neuer bred more honorable mindes, more aduenturous hartes, more valorous handes, or more excellent wittes, then of-late: it is enough for Filly-folly to intoxicate it ſelfe, though it be not ſuffered to defyle the lande, which the water enuironeth, the Earth enritcheth, the aier enſweeteneth, and the Heauen bleſſeth. The bounteous graces of God are ſowen thicke, but come vp thin: corruption had little need to be / foſtred: wantonneſſe wilbe a nurſe, a bawde, a Poet, a Legend to itſelfe: vertue hath much-adoe to hold-out inuiolably her purpoſed courſe: Reſolution is a forward fellow, and Valour a braue man; but affections are infectious, and appetite muſt ſometime haue his ſwinge. Were Appetite a loyall ſubiect to Reaſon, and Will an affectionate ſeruant to Wiſdom; as Labour is a dutifull vaſſal to Commodity, and Trauail a flying poſt to Honour; ô heauens, what exploites of worth, or rather what miracles of excellency, might be atcheeued in an age of Pollicy, & a world of Induſtry. The date of idle vanityes is expired: awaye with theſe ſcribling paltryes: there is another Sparta in hande, that indeede requireth Spartan Temperance, Spartan Frugality, Spartan exerciſe, Spartan valiancye, Spartan perſeuerance, Spartan inuincibility: and hath no wanton leaſure for the Comedyes of Athens; nor anye bawdy

Digitized by Google

howers for the ſonges of Priapus, or the rymes of Naſhe. Had he begun to Aretinize, when Elderton began to ballat, Gaſcoine to ſonnet, Turberuille to madrigal, Drant to verſify, or Tarleton to extemporiſe; ſome parte of his phantaſticall bibble-bables, and capricious panges, might haue bene tollerated in a greene, and wild youth: but the winde is chaunged, & there is a buſier pageant vpon the ſtage. M. Aſchams Toxophilus long ſithence ſhot at a fairer marke: and M. Gaſcoigne himſelfe, after ſome riper experience, was glad to trye other concluſions in the Lowe Countryes; and beſtowed an honorable commendation vpon Sir Humfrye Gilbertes gallant diſcourſe, of a diſcouery for a newe paſſage to the Eaſt Indyes. But read the report of the worthy Weſterne diſcoueries, by the ſaid Sir Humfry Gilbert: the report of the braue Weſt-Indian voyage by the conduction of Sir Frauncis Drake: the report / of the horrible Septentrionall diſcoueries by the trauail of Sir Martin Forbiſher: the report of the politique diſcouery of Virginia, by the Colony of Sir Walter Raleigh: the report of ſundry other famous diſcoueryes, & aduentures, publiſhed by M. Rychard Hackluit in one volume, a worke of importance: the report of the hoatt wellcom of the terrible Spaniſhe Armada to the coaſt of Inglande, that came in glory, and went in

Digitized by Google

diſhonour: the report of the redoubted voyage into Spaine, and Portugall, whence the braue Earle of Eſſex, and the twoo valorous Generals, Sir Iohn Norris, and Sir Frauncis Drake returned with honour: the report of the reſolute encounter about the Iles Azores, betwixt the Reuenge of Ingland, and an Armada of Spaine; in which encounter braue Sir Richard Grinuile moſt vigorouſly & impetuouſly attempted the extreameſt poſſibilities of valour and fury: for breuity I ouerſkipp many excellent Traicts of the ſame, or the like nature: but reade theſe, and M. William Borrowghes notable diſcourſe of the variation of the compas, or magneticall needle; annexed to the new Attractiue of Robert Norman Hydrographer: vnto which two, Ingland in ſome reſpectes is as much beholding, as Spayne vnto Martin Cortes, & Peter de Medina, for the Arte of Nauigation: and when you haue obſerued the courſe of Induſtry; examined the antecedents, and conſequents of Trauail; compared Ingliſh, and Spaniſh valour; meaſured the Forces of both parties; weighed euery circumſtance of Aduantage: conſidered the Meanes of our aſſurance: and finally found proffit to be our pleaſure, prouiſion our ſecurity, labour our honour, warfare our welfare: who of reckoning, can ſpare anye lewde, or vaine tyme for corrupt pamphlets; or who of

Digitized by Google

iudgment, will not cry? away with theſe paultringe fidle-fadles. / When Alexander in his conquerous expeditions viſited the ruines of Troy, and reuolued in his minde the valiant actes of the Heroicall Woorthies there atchieued; One offered to bring his Maieſty, the Harpe of Paris: Let it alone, quoth hee, it is the Harpe of Achilles, that muſt ſerue my turne. Paris vppon his harpe, ſang voluptuous, & laſciuious Carols: Achilles harpe was an inſtrument of glory, and a quier of diuine Hymnes, conſecrated to the honour of valorous Captaines, and mighty Conquerours. He regarded not the dainety Lydian, Iönian, or Æolian Melody: but the braue Dorian, and impetuous Phrygian Muſique: and waged Zenophantus to enflame and enrage his courage with the furious notes of Battail. One Alexander was a thouſand Examples of Proweſſe: but Pyrrhus, the redoubted king of the Epirots, was an other Alexander in tempeſtuous execution: and in a moſt-noble reſolution contemned the Vanities of vnnoble Paſtimes: in ſo much that, when one of his Barons aſked his Maieſtie, whether of the twoo Muſitians, Chariſius, or Python, pleaſed his Highneſſe better: Whether of the two, quoth Pyrrhus: marry Polyſperces ſhall go for my money. He was a braue Captaine for the eie, & a fitt Muſitian for the eare of Pyrrhus. Happy Polyſperces, that ſerued ſuch a

Digitized by Google

maſter: and happy Pyrrhus that commaunded ſuch a ſeruaunt. Were ſome demaunded, whether Greenes, or Naſhes Pamflets, were better penned: I beleeue they would aunſweare; Sir Roger Williams Diſcourſe of War for Militare Doctrine in Eſſe; and M. Thomas Digges Stratioticos, for Militare Diſcipline in Eſſe. And whiles I remember the Princely care of Gelo, a famous Tyrant of Sicill, (many tyrants of Sicill were very politique) that commaunded his great horſe to be brought into the banquetting houſe, where other / Lordes called for the Harpe, other Knights for the Waites: I cannot forget the gallant diſcourſe of Horſemanſhip, penned by a rare gentleman, M. Iohn Aſtely of the Court: whom I dare intitle our Inglifh Xenophon; and maruell not, that Pietro Bizzaro, a learned Italian, propoſeth him for a perfect Patterne of Caſtilios Courtier. And thinking vpon worthy M. Aſtely, I cannot ouerpaſſe the like labour of good M. Thomas Blundeuil, without due commendation: whoſe painefull, and ſkillfull bookes of Horſemanſhip, deſerue alſo to be regiſtred in the Catalogue of Xenophontian woorkes. What ſhould I ſpeake of the two braue Knightes, Muſidorus, and Pyrocles, combined in one excellent knight, Sir Philip Sidney; at the remembrance of whoſe woorthy, and ſweete Vertues, my hart melteth? Will you needes haue

Digitized by Google

a written Pallace of Pleaſure, or rather a printed Court of Honour? Read the Counteſſe of Pembrookes Arcadia, a gallant Legendary, full of pleaſurable accidents, and proffitable diſcourſes; for three thinges eſpecially, very notable; for amorous Courting, (he was young in yeeres;) for ſage counſelling, (he was ripe in iudgement;) and for valorous fighting, (his ſoueraine profeſſion was Armes:) and delightfull paſtime by way of Paſtorall exerciſes, may paſſe for the fourth. He that will Looue, let him learne to looue of him, that will teach him to Liue; & furniſh him with many pithy, and effectuall inſtructions, delectably interlaced by way of proper deſcriptions of excellent Perſonages, and common narrations of other notable occurrences; in the veine of Saluſt, Liuy, Cornelius Tacitus, Iuſtine, Eutropius, Philip de Comines, Guicciardine, and the moſt ſententious Hiſtorians, that haue powdred their ſtile with the ſalt of diſcretion, and ſeaſoned their iudgement with the leauen / of experience. There want not ſome ſuttle Stratagems of importance, and ſome politique Secretes of priuitie: and he that would ſkillfully, and brauely manage his weapon with a cunning Fury, may finde liuely Precepts in the gallant Examples of his valianteſt Duelliſts; eſpecially of Palladius, and Daiphantus; Zelmane. and Amphialus; Phalantus, and Amphialus: but chiefly

Digitized by Google

of Argalus, and Amphialus; Pyrocles, and Anaxius; Muſidorus, and Amphialus, whoſe luſty combats, may ſeeme Heroicall Monomachies. And that the valour of ſuch redoubted men, may appeere the more conſpicuous, and admirable, by compariſon, and interview of their contraries; ſmile at the ridiculous encounters of Dametas, & Dorus; of Dametas, and Clinias; and euer when you thinke vpon Dametas, remember the Confuting Champion, more ſurquidrous then Anaxius, and more abſurd then Dametas: and if I ſhould alwayes hereafter call him Dametas, I ſhould fitt him with a name, as naturally proper vnto him, as his owne. Gallant Gentlemen, you that honor Vertue, and would enkindle a noble courage in your mindes to euery excellent purpoſe; if Homer be not at hand, (whome I haue often tearmed the Prince of Poets, and the Poet of Princes) you may read his furious Iliads, & cunning Odyſſes in the braue aduentures of Pyrocles, and Muſidorus: where Pyrocles playeth the dowty fighter, like Hector, or Achilles; Muſidorus, the valiant Captaine, like Pandarus, or Diomedes; both, the famous errant Knightes, like Æneas, or Vlyſſes. Lord, what would himſelfe haue prooued in fine, that was the gentleman of Curteſy, the Eſquier of Induſtry, and the Knight of Valour at thoſe yeeres? Liue euer ſweete Booke; the ſiluer

Digitized by Google

Image of his gentle witt, and the golden Pillar of his noble courage: and euer notify vnto / the worlde, that thy Writer, was the Secretary of Eloquence; the breath of the Muſes; the hooney-bee of the dayntieſt flowers of Witt, and Arte; the Pith of morall, & intellectuall Vertues; the arme of Bellona in the field; the toung of Suada in the chãber; the ſpirite of Practiſe in eſſe; and the Paragon of Excellency in Print. And now whiles I conſider, what a Trompet of Honour, Homer hath bene to ſturre-vp many woorthy Princes; I cannot forget the woorthy Prince, that is a Homer to himſelfe, a Golden ſpurre to Nobility, a Scepter to Vertue, a Verdure to the Spring, a Sunne to the day; and hath not onely tranſlated the two diuine Poems of Saluſtius du Bartas, his heauenly Vrany, and his helliſh Furies: but hath readd a moſt valorous Martial Lecture vnto himſelfe in his owne victorious Lepanto, a ſhort, but heroicall worke, in meeter, but royal meeter, fitt for a Dauids harpe. Lepanto, firſt the glory of Chriſtendome againſt the Turke; and now the garland of a ſoueraine crowne. When young Kings haue ſuch a care of their flouriſhing Prime; and like Cato, are ready to render an accompt of their vacant howers; as if Aprill were their Iuly, and May their Auguſt: how ſhould gentlemen of yeeres, employ the golden talent of their Induſtry, and trauaile?

Digitized by Google

with what feruency; with what vigour; with what zeale, with what inceſſant, and indefatigable endeuour? Phy vpon fooleries: there be honourable woorkes to doe; and notable workes to read. The afore-named Bartas, (whome elſewhere I haue ſtiled the Treaſurer of Humanity, and the Ieweller of Diuinity) for the highneſſe of his ſubiect, and the maieſty of his verſe, nothing inferiour vnto Dante, (whome ſome Italians preferre before Virgil, or Homer,) a right inſpired and enrauiſhed Poet; full of choſen, graue, profound, venerable, and ſtately matter; euen / in the next Degree to the ſacred, and reuerend ſtile of heauenly Diuinity it ſelfe. In a manner the onely Poet, whom Vrany hath voutſafed to Laureate with her owne heauenly hand: and worthy to bee alleadged of Diuines, and Counſellours, as Homer is quoted of Philoſophers, & Oratours. Many of his ſolemne verſes, are oracles: & one Bartas, that is, one French Salomõ, more weighty in ſtern, and mighty counſell, then the Seauen Sages of Greece. Neuer more beauty in vulgar Languages: but his ſtile addeth fauour, and grace to beauty; and in a goodly Boddy repreſenteth a puiſſant Soule. How few verſes carry ſuch a perſonage of ſtate? or how few argumentes, ſuch a ſpirite of maieſty? Or where is the diuine inſtincte, that can ſufficiently commend ſuch a volume of celeſtiall inſpiration?

Digitized by Google

What a iudgement hath the noble youth, the harueſt of the Spring, the ſapp of Apollos tree, the diademe of the Muſes, that leaueth the enticingeſt flowers of delite, to reape the matureſt fruites of wiſedome? Happy plants, that ſpeedily ſhew-foorth their generous nature: and a ſoueraigne good poſſeſſeth thoſe worthy mindes, that ſuffer not their affections to be inueigled, or entangled with any vnworthy thought. Great Exerciſes become great perſonages: as the Magnes approueth his Nobility in commaunding Iron, and taming the Sea: baſer, or meaner paſtimes belong vnto meaner Perſons; as Iett diſcouereth his gentry, in drawing chaffe, haires, and ſuch trifles. A meete qualitie for Iett, or a pretty feate for Amber, to iuggle chaffe, feſtues, or the like weighty burdens: but excellent mindes are employed, like the noble Magnes, and euer conuerſant either in effecting, or in peruſing, or in penning excellent workes. It were an impoſſible attempte, to do right vnto the great Captaine, Monſieur de la Noë, and the / braue ſoldiour, the French King himſelfe, two terrible thunderboltes of warre, and two impetuous whirlewinds of the Field: whoſe writinges are like their actions, reſolute, effectuall, valiant, politique, vigorous, full of aëry, & fiery ſpirite, honourable, renowned wherefoeuer Valour hath a mouth, or Vertue a pen. Could the Warlie

Digitized by Google

Horſe ſpeake, as he can runne, and fight, he would tell them, they are hoat Knightes: and could the bluddy Sword write, as it can ſheare, it would dedicate a volume of Fury vnto the one, and a monument of Victory vnto the other. Albeit men ſhould be malitious, or forgetfull, (Spite is malitious, and Ingratitude forgetfull) yet Proweſſe hath a Clouen Tounge; and teacheth Admiration in a fiery language to pleade the glorious honour of emproued valiancy.

Some accuſe their deſtiny; but bleſſed Key, that openeth ſuch lockes: and lucky, moſt lucky fortune, that yeeldeth ſuch vertue. Braue Chiualry, a continuall witneſſe of their valour and terribility in warre: and gallant Induſtry the dayly bread of their life, in peace, or truce. Report ſhining Sunne, the dayes-worke of the King: and burning Candle, relate his Nightes-ſtuddy: and both ridd me of an endleſſe labour. For who euer prayſed the wonders of Heauen?

And what an infinite courſe were it, to runne-thorough the particular commendations of the famous redoubted actours, or the notable pregnant writers of this age, euen in the moſt-puiſſant Heroicall, and Argonauticall kinde?

Nimble Entelechy hath beene a ſtraunger in ſome Countries: albeit a renowned Citiſen of Greece; and a free Deniſen of Italy, Spaine, Fraunce, and

Digitized by Google

Germany : but wellcome the moſt-naturall inhabitant of the world ; the ſaile of the ſhip, the flight of the bowe, the ſhott of the gunne, the / wing of the Eagle, the quinteſſence of the minde, the courſe of the ſunne, the motion of the heauens, the influence of the ſtarres, the heate of the fire, the lightneſſe of the Ayer, the ſwiftneſſe of the winde, the ſtreame of the water, the frutefulneſſe of the Earth, the ſingularitie of this age: and thanke thy moſt-vigorous ſelfe for ſo many precious workes of diuine furie, and powerable conſequence ; reſpectiuely comparable with the richeſt Treaſuries, and braueſt armories of Antiquitie. Thriſe-happie, or rather a thouſand times-happie Creature, that with moſt aduantage of all honorable opportunities, & with the extremeſt poſſibilitie of his whole powers, inward, or outward, emploieth the moſt-excellent excellencie of humane, or diuine Nature. Other Secretes of Nature, and Arte, deſerue an high reputation in their ſeuerall degrees, and may challenge a ſouerain interteinement in their ſpeciall kinds: but Entelechy is the myſterie of myſteries vnder heauen, and the head-ſpring of the powerfulleſt Vertues, that diuinitie infuſeth, humanitie imbraceth, Philoſophie admireth, wiſedome practiſeth, Induſtrie emproueth, valour extendeth ; or he conceiued, that conceiuing the wonderfull faculties of the

Digitized by Google

mind, & aſtoniſhed with the incredible force of a rauiſhed, & enthuſiaſticall ſpirite; in a profound contemplation of that eleuate, and tranſcendent capacitie, (as it were in a deepe ecſtaſie, or Seraphicall viſion,) moſt-pathetically cryed-out; *ô magnum miraculum Homo.* No maruel, ô great miracle, & ô moſt powerful Entelechy, though thou ſeemiſt A Pilgrim to Dametas, that art the Familiar Spirite of Muſidorus: & what wõder, though he empeach thy eſtimation, that deſpiſeth the graces of God, flowteth the conſtellations of heauẽ, frumpeth the operations of nature, mocketh the effectualleſt & auayllableſt Arts, diſdayneth / the name of Induſtrie, or Honeſty, ſcorneth whatſoeuer may appeare Vertuous, fawneth onely vpon his owne conceits, claweth only his owne fauorits, and quippeth, bourdeth, girdeth, aſſeth the excellẽteſt writers of whatſoeuer note, that tickle not his wãton ſenſe. Nothing memorable, or remarkable with him, that feaſteth not the riotous appetite of the ribald, or the humorous conceit of the phãtaſt. It is his S. Fame, to be the infamy of learning: his reformatiõ, to be the corruption of his reader: his felicitie, to be the miſerie of youth: his health, to be the ſcurfe of the Citie, the ſcabbe of the Vniuerſitie, the bile of the Realme: his ſaluation, to be the damnation of whatſoeuer is termed good, or accounted honeſt. Sweet Gentlemen, and floriſh-

Digitized by Google

ing youthes, euer aime at the right line of Arte and Vertue, of the one for knowledge, of the other for valour: and let the crooked rectifie itſelfe. Reſolution wandreth not, like an ignorant Traueller, but in euery enterpriſe, in euery affaire, in euery ſtuddie, in euery cogitation leuelleth at ſome certaintie; and alwayes hath an eye to Vſe, an eare to good report, a regard to worth, a reſpect to aſſurance, and a reference to the end. He that erreth, erreth againſt Truth, and himſelfe: and he that ſinneth, ſinneth againſt God, and himſelfe: he is none of my charge: it ſuffiſeth me to be the Curate of myne owne actions, the maſter of mine owne paſſions, the frend of my frends, the pittyer of my enemies, the loouer of good witts, and honeſt mindes, the affectionate ſeruant of Artes, & Vertues, the humble Oratour of noble Valour, the Commender of the foreſaid honorable writinges, or any commendable workes. Reaſon is no mans tyrant: & Dutie euery mans vaſſall, that deſerueth well. Would this pen were worthy to be the ſlaue of the worthieſt actours, or the bondman of the / aboue mentioned, and the-like important Autours.

Such Mercuriall, and Martiall Diſcourſes, in the actiue, and chiualrous veine, pleade their owne eternall honour: and write euerlaſting ſhame in the forhead of a thouſand friuolous, & ten thouſand phantaſticall Pamflets. I would to Chriſt,

Digitized by Google

ſome of them were but idle toyes, or vayne trifles: but impuritie neuer preſumed ſomuch of impunitie: and licentious follie by priuiledge, lewd ribaldrie by permiſſion, and rank villanie by conniuance, are become famous Autours: not in a popular ſtate, or a petty-principalitie, but in a ſouerain Monarchie, that tendereth politique gouernment, & is to fortifie itſelfe againſt forein hoſtilitie. If Wiſedome ſay not, Phie for ſhame; & Autoritie take not other order in conuenient time: who can tell, what generall plague may enſue of a ſpeciall infection? or when the kinges-euill is paſt cure, who can ſay, we will now heale it? The baddeſt weed groweth faſteſt: and no Gangrene ſo pregnantly diſpreddeth itſelfe, as riott. And what riott ſo peſtiferous, as that, which in ſugred baites preſenteth moſt poiſonous hookes? Sir Skelton, and Maſter Scoggin, were but Innocents to Signior Capricio, and Monſieur Madneſſe: whoſe peſtilent canker ſcorneth all the Medicine of Earth, or heauen.

My writing, is but a priuate note for the publique aduertiſemẽt of ſome fewe: whoſe youth aſketh inſtruction, & whoſe frailtie needeth admonition. In the cure of a canker, it is a generall rule with Surgeõs: It neuer perfectly healeth, vnleſſe the rootes and all be vtterly extirped; and the fleſhe regenerate. But the ſoundeſt Principle is: *Prin-*

Digitized by Google

cipijs obſta: & it goeth beſt with them, that neuer knewe, what a canker, or leper meant.

I ſtill hoped for ſome graffes of better fruite: but this graund / Confuter of my Letters, and all honeſtie, ſtill proceedeth from worſe to worſe, from the wilding-tree to the withie, from the dogge to the goate, from the catt to the ſwine, from Primeroſe hill to Colman hedge: and is ſo rooted in deepe Vanitie, that there is no ende of his profound follie. Which deſerueth a more famous Encomiaſticall Oration, then Eraſmus renowned Follie: and more glorioufly diſdaineth any cure, then the Goute. I may anſwer his hoat rauing in cold termes: and conuince him of what notorious falſehood, or villanie I can: but ſee the frāke ſpirite of a full ſtomack: & who euer was ſo parlouſly matched? Were not my ſimplicitie, or his omniſuficiencie exceeding great; I had neuer bene thus terriblie ouer-challēged. *Gabriel, if there be any witt, or induſtrie in thee, now I will dare it to the vttermoſt: write of what thou wilt, in what language thou wilt, and I will confute it, and anſwere it. Take Truthes part, & I will prooue truth to be no truth, marching out of thy doung-voiding mouth:* & ſo forth in the brauing tenour of the ſame redoubtable ſtile. Good Gentlemen, you ſee the ſweet diſpoſitiō of the man; & neede no other window into the cloſet of his cōſcience, but his owne Gloſſe

Digitized by Google

vpon his owne Text. Whatſoeuer poore I ſay, in any matter, or in any language, albeit Truth auerr and iuſtifie the ſame, he will flatly denie, and confute, euen bicauſe I ſay it; & onely bicauſe in a frolick and dowtie iollitie, he will haue the laſt word of me. His Grammer, is his Catechiſme; *Si ais, nego*: his ſtomack, his Dictionarie in any language: and his quarrell, his Logique in any argument: *Lucian, Iulian, Aretin, I proteſt were you ought elſe but abhominable Atheiſts, that I would obſtinatly defende you, onely bicauſe Laureate Gabriel articles againſt you.* Were there not otherwiſe a maruelous oddes, and incomprehenſible difference betwixt our habi / lities, he would neuer dare me, like a bold Pandare, with ſuch ſtout challenges, and glorious proteſtations: but ſingular wittes haue a great aduantage of ſimple men: and cunning Falſehood is a mightie confuter of plaine Truth. No ſuch champion, as he that fighteth obſtinatly with the target of Confidence, and the long-ſword of Impudence. If any thing extraordinarily emproouetb valour, it is Confidence: and if any thing miraculouſly ſingularizeth witt, it is Impudence. Diſtruſt, is a naturall foole: and Modeſtie, an artificiall foole: he that will exploit wōdermentes, and karrie all before him, like a ſweepe-ſtake, muſt haue a hart of Iron, a forhead of Braſſe, and a toung of Adamant.

Digitized by Google

Pelting circumſtances, marre braue executions: looke into the proceedinges of the greateſt doers; and what haue they more then other men, but Audacitie, and Fortune?

Audendum eſt aliquid, Vinclis, & carcere dignum, Si vis eſſe aliquid. Simplicitie may haue a geſſe at the Principles of the world: and Naſhe affecteth to ſeeme a compound of ſuch Elementes; as bold, as æger, and as æger, as a madd dogge. He will confute me, bicauſe he will: and he can conquer me, bicauſe he can. If I come vpon him with a gentle reply, he will welcome me with a fierce reioynder: for any my briefe Triplication, he will prouide a Quadruplication at-large: & ſo forth in *infinitũ*, with an vndauntable courage: for he ſweareth, *he will neuer leaue me as long as he is hable to lift a penne.* Twentie ſuch famous depoſitions proclaime his dowtie reſolution, and indefatigable hand at a pight fielde. Were I to begin agayne, or cold I handſomely deuiſe to giue him the cleanly ſlipp, I would neuer deale with a ſprite of Coleman hedge, or a May-Lord of Primeroſe hill; that hath all humours / in his liuerie, & can put conſcience in a Vices coate. Na, hee will atchieue impoſſibilities; and in contempt of my ſimplicitie, prooue Truth a counterfaict, and himſelfe a true witneſſe of falſeſt lyes. But Lord, that ſo inuincible a Gentleman ſhould make ſo ſolemne

Digitized by Google

account, of confuting, and reconfuting a perſon of ſo litle worth in his valuation? Sweet man, what ſhould you thinke of troubling your-ſelfe with ſo tedious a courſe, when you might ſo blithly haue taken a quicker order, and may yet proceede more compendiouſly? It had bene a worthy exploit, and beſeeming a witt of ſupererogation, to haue dipped a ſopp in a goblet of *renniſh wine*; and naming it Gabriel, (for you are now growne into great familiaritie with that name) to haue deuoured him vpp at one bit: or taking a *pickle herring* by the throte, and chriſtening it Richard (for you cã chriſten him at your pleaſure) to haue ſwallowed him downe with a ſtomack. Did you neuer heare of deteſtable Iewes, that made a picture of Chriſt; and then buffetted, cuggelled, ſcourged, crucified, ſtabbed, pierced, and mangled the-ſame moſt vnmercifully? Now you haue a patterne, I doubt not but you can with a dexteritie, chopp-of the head of a dead hoony bee, and boaſt you haue ſtricken Iohn, as dead as a doore-nayle. Other ſpoyle, or victorie (by the leaue of the foreſaid redoubted daring) will prooue a buſie peece of worke for the ſonne of a mule, a rawe Grammarian, a brabling Sophiſter, a counterfaict cranke, a ſtale rakehell, a piperly rymer, a ſtump-worne railer, a dodkin autor: whoſe two ſwordes, are like the hornes of an hodmandod; whoſe courage,

Digitized by Google

like the furie of a gad-bee; and whoſe ſurmounting brauerie, like the wings of a butterfly. I take no pleaſure to call thee an Aſſe; but thou proouest thi-ſelfe a Haddock: and although I ſay not, / Thou art a foole, yet thou wilt needs bewray thy diet, and diſgorge thy ſtomack of the Lobſter, and coddeſhed, wherewith thou didſt englutt thiſelfe, ſince thy notorious ſurfett of pikle herring, and dogfiſh. Thou art neither *Dorbell, nor Duns, nor Thomas of Aquine:* they were three ſharp-edged, and quickſented ſchoolemen, full of nimble witt, and intricate quiddities in their arguing kinde, eſpecially *Duns, and Thomas*: but by ſome of thy cauilling *Ergos*, thou ſhouldſt ſeeme to be the ſpawne of Iauell, or Tartaret: & as very a crab-fiſh at an *Ergo*, as euer crawled-ouer Carters Logique, or the *Poſteriorums of Iohannes de Lapide*. When I looke vpõ thy firſt page (as I daily behold that terrible Empreſe for a recreation) ſtill methinkes there ſhould come fluſhing-out the great Atlas of Logique, and Aſtronomie, that ſupported the orbes of the heauens by Art: or the mightie Hercules of Rhetorique and Poetrie, that with certaine maruelous fine, and delicate chaines, drewe after him the vaſſals of [the] world by the eares. But examin his ſuttellieſt *Ergos*, & taſt his nappieſt Inuention, or daintieſt Elocution, (he that hath nothing elſe to do, may hold him-

Digitized by Google

ſelfe occupied): and Art will ſoone finde the huge Behemoth of Conceit, to be the ſprat of a pickle herring; and the hideous Leuiathan of Vainglorie, to be a ſhrimpe in Witt, a periwinkle in Art, a dandiprat in Induſtrie, a dodkin in Valu; and ſuch a toy of toyes, as euery right Schollar hiſſeth at in iudgement, and euery fine Gentleman maketh the Obiect of his ſcorne. He can raile: (what mad Bedlam cannot raile?) but the ſauour of his railing, is groſely fell, and ſmelleth noyſomly of the pumpe, or a naſtier thing. His gayeſt flooriſhes, are but Gaſcoignes weedes, or Tarletons trickes, or Greenes crankes, or Marlowes brauados: his ieſtes, but the dregges of cõmon ſcurrilitie, the / ſhreds of the theater, or the of-ſcouring of new Pamflets: his freſheſt nippitatie, but the froth of ſtale inuentiõs, long-ſince lothſome to quick taſtes: his ſhrouing ware, but lenten ſtuff, like the old pickle herring: his luſtieſt verdure, but ranke ordure, not to be named in Ciuilitie, or Rhetorique: his only Art, & the vengeable drift of his whole cunning, to mangle my ſentences, hack my arguments, chopp and change my phraſes, wrinch my wordes, and hale euery ſillable moſt extremely; euen to the diſioynting, and maiming of my whole meaning. O times: ô paſtimes: ô mõſtrous knauerie. The reſidue whatſoeuer, hath nothing more in it, then is vſuallie in euery ruffianly

Digitized by Google

Copeſmate, that hath bene a Grãmar ſchollar, readeth riotous bookes, hanteth roiſterly companie, delighteth in rude ſcoffing, & karrieth a deſperate minde. Let him be thorowly peruſed by any indifferent reader whomſoeuer, that can iudiciouſly diſcerne, what is what; and will vprightly cenſure him according to his ſkill, without partialitie *pro*, or *contra*: and I dare vndertake, he will affirme no leſſe, vpon the credit of his iudgement; but will definitiuely pronounce him, the very Baggage of new writers. I could nominate the perſon, that vnder his hand-writing hath ſtiled him, The cockiſh challenger, the lewd ſcribler, the offal of corrupteſt mouthes, the draff of filthieſt pennes, the bag-pudding of fooles, & the very pudding-pittes of the wiſe, or honeſt. He might haue read of foure notable thinges, which many a iollie man weeneth he hath at will, when he hath nothing leſſe: much knowledge; ſound wiſedome; great power; & many frends. And he might haue heard of other foure ſpeciall thinges, that worke the deſtruction, or confuſion of the forwardeſt practitioners: a headlong deſire to know much haſtily; a greedie thirſt to haue much ſud/dainly; an ouerweening conceit of themſelues; and a ſurly contempt of other. I could peraduẽture arread him his fortune in a fatall booke, as verifiable, as peremptorie: but I looue not to inſult vpõ miſerie: & Deſtinie is a

Digitized by Google

Iudge, whoſe ſentence needeth no other execution, but itſelfe. No preuention, but deepe repentance; an impoſſible remedy, where deepe Obſtinacie is grounded, and high Preſumption aſpireth aboue the Moone. Hawtie minds may flie aloft, and haſten their owne ouer-throw; but it is not the wainſcott forhead of a Rudhuddibras, that can arreare ſuch an huge opinion, as himſelfe in a ſtrong conceit of a mighty conception, ſeemeth to trauaill withall: as it were with a flying Bladude, attempting wonderments in the Ayre, or a Simon Magus, experimenting impoſſibilities, from the top of the Capitoll. He muſt either accompliſh ſome greater worke of Supererogation, with actual atchieuement, (that is now a principall point): or immortalize himſelfe the prowdeſt Vaine ſott, that euer abuſed the world with foppiſh oſtentation; not in one, or two pages, but in the firſt, the laſt, & euery leafe of his Strange Newes. For the end is like the beginning; the midſt like both; and euery part like the whole. Railing, railing, railing: bragging, bragging, bragging: and nothing elſe, but fowle railing vpon railing, and vayne bragging vpon bragging; as rudely, groſely, odiouſly, filthily, beaſtly, as euer ſhamed Print. Vnleſſe he meant to ſett-vpp a Railing ſchoole, and to read a publike Lecture of bragging, as the onely regall profeſſour of that, and that facultie, now other

Digitized by Google

ſhiftes begin to fayle. I wonder, his owne mouth can abide it without a phah. You haue heard ſome worthie Premiſſes: behold a braue concluſion:

Awaite the world, the Tragedy of Wrath:
What / next I paint, ſhall tread no common Path:

with an other doubble *Aut*, for a gallant Embleme, or a glorious Farewell; *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice.* Subſcribed with his owne hande; *Thomas Naſh.* Not expect, or attend, but *a wait*: not ſome few, or the Citty, or the Vniuerſity, or this Land, or Europe, *but the World*: not a Comedy, or a Declamation, or an Inuectiue, or a Satire, or any like Elencticall diſcourſe: but a *Tragedy*, and the very *Tragedy of Wrath*; that ſhall daſh the direfulleſt Tragedies of Seneca, Euripides, or Sophocles, out of Conceit. *The next peece*, not of his Rhetorique, or Poetry, but of his *Painture*, ſhall *not treade* the way to Poules, or Weſtminſter, or the Royall Exchange; but at leaſt ſhall perfect the Venus face of Apelles, or ſett the world an euerlaſting Sample of inimitable artificiality. Other mens writing in proſe, or verſe, may plodd-on, as before; but *his Painting* will now tread *A rare Path*; and by the way beſtow A new Leſſon vppon Rhetorique, how to continue a metaphor, or vphold an Allegory with aduauntage. *The tread-*

Digitized by Google

ing of that rare Path, by that exquiſite *Painting*, (his woorkes are miracles; and his *Painting*, can *treade*, like his dauncing, or friſking, *no common but a proper Path*) who expecteth not with an attentiue, a ſeruiceable, a coouetous, a longing expectation? *A wait world:* and Apelles tender thy moſt affectionate deuotion, to learne a wonderfull peece of curious workemanſhip, when it ſhall pleaſe his next *Painting* to *tread the path* of his moſt ſingular ſingularity. Meanewhile it hath pleaſed ſoome ſweete wittes of my acquaintaunce, (whome Heauen hath baptized the Spirites of harmony, and the Muſes haue enterteyned for their Paramours) to reacquite Sonnets with Sonnets, and to ſnibb the Thraſonicall rimeſter with Angelical meeter, that may haply / appeare in fitt place: and finely diſcouer young Apuleius in his ramping roabe; the fourth Furie in his Tragicall Pageant; the new Sprite in his proper haunt, or buttry; and the confuting Diuell in the horologe. One She, & two He's haue vowed, they will pumpe *his Railing Inkhorne* as dry, as euer was Holborne Conduit: and ſquiſe *his Craking Quill* to as emptie a ſpunge, as any in Hoſier Lane. Which of you, gallãt Gentlemẽ, hath not ſtripped *his ſtale Ieſtes* into their thredbare ragges; or ſo ſeldome as an hundred times pittied his creaſt-falne ſtile, & his ſocket-worne inuention? Who would haue thought,

Digitized by Google

or could haue imagined, to haue found the witt of Pierce, ſo ſtarued and clunged: the conceit of an aduerſarie, ſo weather-beaten, and tired: the learning of a ſchollar, ſo pore-blind, and lame: the elocutiō of the Diuels Oratour, ſo lanke, ſo wan, ſo meager, ſo blunt, ſo dull, ſo fordead, ſo gaſtly, where the maſculine Furie meant to play his griſlieſt, and horribleſt part? Welfare a good viſage in a bad cauſe: or farwell Hope, the kindeſt cooſener of forlorne harts. The deſperate minde, that aſſayeth impoſſibilities in nature, or vndertaketh incredibilities in Art, muſt be cōtent to ſpeed thereafter. When euery attempt faileth in performance, and euery extremitie foileth the enterpriſer, at-laſt euen Impudencie it ſelfe muſt be faine to giue-ouer in the plaine fielde: and neuer yeeld credit to the word of that moſt credible Gentlewoman, if the very braſen buckler prooue not finally a notorious Daſh-Naſh. He ſummed all in a briefe, but materiall Summe; that called *the old Aſſe*, the great A, and the eſt Amen of the *new Supererogation*. And were I here cōpelled to diſpatch abruptly, (as I am preſently called to a more commodious exerciſe) ſhould I not ſufficiētly haue diſcharged my taſke; and plentifully haue cōmended / *that famous creature*, whoſe prayſe the Title of this Pamflet profeſſeth? He that would honor Alexander, may

Digitized by Google

crowne him the great A. of puiſſance: but Pyrrhus, Hanniball, Scipio, Pompey, Cæſar, diuers other mightie Conquerours, & euē ſom moderne Worthies would diſdaine, to haue him ſceptred the eſt-Amen of Valour. What a braue, and incomparable Alexander, is that great A that is alſo the eſt-Amen of Supererogatiō; a more miraculous and impoſſible peece of worke, thē the dowtieſt puiſſance, or worthieſt valour in the old, or new world? Shall I ſay, bleſſed, or peereleſſe young Apuleius, that from the ſwathing bandes of his infancie in Print, was ſuckled of the ſweeteſt nurſes, lulled of the deereſt groomes, cockered of the fineſt miniōs, cowled of the daintieſt paramours, hugged of the enticingeſt darlinges, and more then tenderly tendered of the moſt delitious Muſes, the moſt-amiable Graces, and the moſt-powerfull Vertues of the ſaid vnmatchable great A. the graund founder of Supererogatiō, and ſole Patron of ſuch meritorious clients. As for other remarkable Particulars in the Straunge Newes; Ink is ſo like Ink, ſpite ſo like ſpite, impudencie ſo like impudencie, brocage ſo like brocage, and Tom-Penniles now, ſo like Papp-hatchet, when the time was; that I neede but ouerrun an old cenſure of the One, by way of new application to the Other. The notes of Martiniſme appertaine vnto thoſe, whom they concerne. Pierce would laugh, to be charged with

Digitized by Google

Martiniſme, or any Religion: though Martin himſelfe for a challenging, rufling, and railing ſtile, not ſuch a Martin. Two contraries; but two ſuch contraries, as can teach Extremities to play the contraries, and to confound themſelues.

Papp-hatchet, deſirous for his benefit, to currie fauour with / a noble Earle; and in defecte of other meanes of Commendatiõ, labouring to inſinuate himſelfe by ſmooth gloſing, & coũterfait ſuggeſtiõs, (it is a Courtly feate, to ſnatch the leaſt occaſionet of aduantage, with a nimble dexteritie); ſome yeares ſince prouoked me, to make the beſt of it, inconſideratly; to ſpeake like a frend, vnfrendly; to ſay, as it was, intolerably; without priuate cauſe, or any reaſon in the world: (for in truth I looued him, in hope prayſed him; many wayes fauored him, and neuer any way offended him): and notwithſtanding that ſpitefull prouocatiõ, and euen that odious threatening of ten yeares prouiſion, he had euer paſſed vntouched with any ſillable of reuenge in Print, had not Greene, and this dog-fiſh, abhominably miſuſed the verbe passiue; as ſhould appeare, by his procurement, or encouragement, aſſuredly moſt vndeſerued, and moſt iniurious. For what other quarrel, could Greene, or this dogge-fiſh euer picke with me: whom I neuer ſo much as twitched by the ſleeue, before I founde miſelfe, and my deareſt frendes,

Digitized by Google

vnſufferably quipped in moſt contumelious, and opprobrious termes. But nowe there is no remedie, haue amongeſt you, blind Harpers of the Printing houſe: for I feare not ſix hundred Crowders, were all your wittes aſſembled in one capp of Vanitie, or all your galles vnited in one bladder of choler. I haue loſt more labour, then the tranſcripting of this Cenſure: which I dedicate neither to Lord, nor Lady, but to Truth, and Æquitie; on whoſe ſouerain Patronage I relye.

Digitized by Google

An | Aduertiſement for Papp-hatchett, and Martin Mar-prelate.

PApp-hatchett (for the name of thy good nature is pittyfully growen out-of requeſt) thy olde acquaintance in the Sauoy, when young Euphues hatched the egges, that his elder freendes laide, (ſurely Euphues was ſomeway a pretty fellow: would God Lilly had alwaies bene Euphues, and neuer Pap-hatchet;) that old acquaintance, now ſomewhat ſtraungely ſaluted with a new remembrance, is neither lubbabied with thy ſweete Papp, nor ſcarre-crowed with thy ſower hatchet. And although in ſelfe-conceit thou knoweſt not thy ſelfe, yet in experience, thou mighteſt haue knowen him, that can Vnbutton thy vanity, and Vnlaſe thy folly: but in pitty ſpareth thy childiſh ſimplicity, that in iudgement ſcorneth thy roiſterly brauery; and neuer thought ſo baſely of thee, as ſince thou began'ſt to diſguiſe thy witt, and diſgrace thy arte with ruffianly foolery. He winneth not moſt

Digitized by Google

abroad that weeneth moſt at-home: and in my poore fancy, it were not greatly amiſſe, euen for the perteſt, and gayeſt companions, (notwithſtanding whatſoeuer courtly holly-water, or plauſible hopes of preferment) to deigne their olde familiars the continuance of their former courteſies, without contempt of the barraineſt giftes, or empeachment of the meaneſt perſons. The ſimpliſt man in a pariſh, is a ſhrewd / foole; and Humanity an Image of Diuinity; that pulleth-downe the hawty, and ſetteth-vp the meeke. Euphues, it is good to bee merry: and Lilly, it is good to bee wiſe: and Papp-hatchet, it is better to looſe a new ieſt, then an old frend; that can cramme the capon with his owne Papp, and hew-downe the woodcocke with his owne hatchet. Bolde men, and marchant Venturers haue ſometime good lucke: but happ-hazard hath oftentimes good leaue to beſhrow his owne pate; and to imbarke the hardy foole in the famous Shipp of wiſemen. I cannot ſtand noſing of Candleſtickes, or euphuing of Similes, *alla Sauoica*: it might happly be done with a trice: but euery man hath not the guift of *Albertus Magnus*: rare birds are dainty; and they are queint creatures, that are priuiledged to create new creatures. When I haue a mint of precious ſtones; & ſtraunge Foules, beaſtes, and fiſhes of mine owne coyning, (I could name the party, that in com-

Digitized by Google

pariſon of his owne naturall Inuentions, tearmed Pliny a barraine woombe ;) I may peraduenture bleſſe you with your owne croſſes, & pay you with the vſury of your owne coyne. In the meane while beare with a plaine man, as plaine as old Accurſius, or Barthol de Saxo ferrato ; that wil make his Cenſure good vpon the carrion of thy vnſauory, and ſtincking Pamflett; a fitt booke to be ioyned with Scoggins woorkes, or the French Mirrour of Madneſſe. The very Title discouereth the wiſedome of the young-man: as an olde Fox not long ſince bewrayed himſelfe by a flap of his taile; and a Lion, they ſay, is ſoone deſcried by his pawe ; a Cocke by his combe; a Goat by his bearde; an Aſſe by his eare; a wiſe-man by his tale ; an artiſt by his tearmes.

Papp with an hatchet: aliàs, a Figg for my God-ſonne
or, Cracke me this nutt : or, a Country Cuffe,
that / is, A ſound boxe of the eare, & cetera.
Written by one, that dares call a Dog a Dog.
Imprinted by Iohn Anoke, and Iohn Aſtile, for the Baily
of Withernam, Cum priuilegio perennitatis :
And are to be ſold at the ſigne of the Crabbtree Cudgell
in Thwack-coate Lane.

What deuiſe of Martin, or what inuention of any other, could haue ſett a fairer Orientall Starre

Digitized by Google

vpon the forhead of that foule libell? Now you ſee the brande, and know the Blackamore by his face, turne ouer the leafe; and by the wittineſſe of his firſt ſentence, aime at the reſt. Milke is like milke: hoony like hoony: Papp like papp: and hee like himſelfe; in the whole, a notable ruffler, and in euery part a dowty braggard. *Roome for a roiſter: ſo thats well ſaid: itch a little further for a good fellow: now haue at you all, my gaffers of the rayling religion: tis I, that muſt take you a pegg lower. Ile make ſuch a ſplinter runne into your wittes:* and ſo foorth in the ſame luſty tenour. A very artificiall beginning, to mooue attention, or to procure good-liking in the reader: vnleſſe he wrote onely to roiſter-doiſters, & hackſters, or at-leaſt to ieſters and vices. Oh, but in his Preamble to the indifferent reader, he approueth himſelfe a maruellous diſcreet, and modeſt man of the ſobereſt ſort, were he not prouoked in conſcience, to aunſweare contrary to his nature, and manner. You may ſee, how graue men may be made light, to defend the Church. I perceiue, they were wiſe, that at riotous times, when youth was wantonneſt, and knauery luſtieſt, as in Chriſtmas, at Shrofetide, in May, at the ende of Harueſt, and by ſuch wild fittes, created a certaine extraordinary Officer, called a Lord of Miſrule, as a needefull gouernour, or Dictatour,

Digitized by Google

to ſet thinges in order, and to rule vnruly people; with whome otherwiſe / there were no Ho. So, when Reuell-rout beginneth to be a current Autour; or Hurly-burly a buſy Promotour: *roome for a roiſter*, that will bore them thorough the noſes with a cuſhion; that will bung-vp their mouthes with a Collyrium of all the ſtale ieſtes in a country; that will ſuffer none to play the Rex, but himſelfe. For that is the very depth of his plot: and who euer began with more roiſterly tearmes; or proceeded with more ruffianly ſcoffes; or concluded with more haire brain'd trickes; or tired himſelfe with more weather-beaten cranckes? What ſcholler, or gentleman, can reade ſuch alehouſe and tinkerly ſtuffe without bluſhing? They were much deceiued in him, at Oxford, and in the Sauoy, when Maſter Abſolon liued; that tooke him onely for a dapper & deft companion, or a pert-conceited youth, that had gathered-togither a fewe prettie ſentences, and could handſomly helpe young Euphues to an old *Simile:* & neuer thought him any ſuch mighty doer at the ſharpe. But *Ile, Ile, Ile*, is a parlous fellow at *a hatchett: heſe like Death: hele ſpare none: hele ſhowe them an Iriſh tricke: hele make them weepe Iriſh: heſe good at the ſticking blow: his Poſie, what care I? Vie ſtabbes*, good Eccleſiaſticall learning in his Apologie; and good Chriſtian charitie in his Homilie. Muſter his

Digitized by Google

arrant braueries togither : and where ſuch a terrible killcowe, or ſuch a vengeable bull-beggar to deal withall? O dreadfull dubble V. that carrieſt the dubble ſtoccado in thy penne, what a dubble ſtabber woldeſt thou be, were thy hand as tall a fellow, as thy hart, or thy witt as luſtie a ladd, as thy minde? Other good fellowes may tell Tales of Gawin: thou art Sir Gawin reuiued, or rather Terrour in perſon. Yet ſhall I putt a beane into Gawins ratling ſcull: and tell thee, where thy ſlaſhing / Long-ſword commeth ſhort? Thou profeſſeſt Railing; and emproueſt thiſelfe in very deede an egregious Railer, as diſdaining to yeelde vnto any He, or She Scolde of this age: but what ſaith my particular Analyſis? Dubble V. is old-excellent at his *Cornu copiæ*; and I warrant you, neuer to ſeeke in his Horne-booke: but debarre thoſſame horeſon Tales of a tubb; and put him beſide his Horning, Gaming, Fooling, and Knauing: and he is no boddy, but a fewe pilfred *Similes*; a little Pedanticall Latin; and the higheſt pitch of his witt, Bulles motion, *alias* the hangmans apron. His Ryme, foreſtalled by Elderton, that hath Ballats lying a ſteepe in ale: his Reaſon, by a Cambrige wagg, a twigging Sophiſter, that will *Ergo* Martin into an ague, and concludeth peremptorily, Therfore Tiburne muſt be furr'd with Martins: nothing left for the Third diſputer,

Digitized by Google

but Railing thorough all the moodes, and figures of knauerie, as they come freſh, and freſh to his hand. All three iumpe *in eodem tertio*: nothing but a certaine exerciſe, termed hanging, will ſerue their turne: (if it be his deſtinie, what remedie?) they muſt draw cuttes, who ſhall play the Hangeman: and that is the argument of the Tragedie, and the very papp of the hatchet. Theſe are yet all the common-places of his great Paper-boke, & the whole Inuentarie of his witt: though in time he may haply learne to play at ninehole-nidgets; or to canuas a liuerie flowt thorough all the Predicaments of the fower, & twentie orders. When I firſt tooke a glancing vewe of *Ile*, Ile, Ile, & durſt ſcarſely, be ſo hardy, to looke the hatchet in the face; methought his Imagination, was hedded like a Saracen; his ſtomack bellyed, like the great Globe of Orontius; & his breath, like the blaſt of Boreas in the great Mapp of Mercator. But when we began to renue our old acquain / tance, and to ſhake the handes of discontinued familiaritie, alas good Gentleman; his mandillion was ouer-cropped; his witt paunched, like his wiues ſpindle; his art ſhanked, like a lath; his conceit as lank, as a ſhotten herring; and that ſame bluſtering eloquence, as bleake, and wan, as the Picture of a forlorne Loouer. Nothing, but pure Mammaday, and a fewe morſels of fly-blowne

Digitized by Google

Euphuiſme, ſomewhat nicely minced for puling ſtomackes. But there be Painters enough, though I goe roundly to worke: and it is my onely purpoſe, to ſpeake to the purpoſe. I long ſithence founde by experience, how Dranting of Verſes, and Euphuing of ſentences did edifie. But had I conſulted with the Prognoſtication of Iohn Securis, I might peraduenture haue ſaued ſome looſe endes for after clapps. Now his nephew Hatchet muſt be content to accept of ſuch ſpare intertainement, as he findeth.

It was Martins folly, to begin that cutting vaine: ſome others ouerſight, to continue it: and doubble V: triumph, to ſet it agogg. If the world ſhould applaude to ſuch roiſſterdoiſterly Vanity, (as Impudency hath beene prettily ſuffered to ſett-vpp the creaſt of his vaineglory:) what good could grow out of it, but to make euery man madbrayned, and deſperate; but a generall contempt of all good order, in Saying, or Dooing but an Vniuerſall Topſy-tur[v]y? He were a very ſimple Oratour, a more ſimple politician, and a moſt-ſimple Deuine, that ſhould fauour Martinizing: but had I bene Martin, (as for a time I was vainely ſuſpected by ſuch madd Copeſmates, that can ſurmize any thing for their purpoſe, howſoeuer vnlikely, or monſtrous:) I would haue beene ſo farre from being mooued by ſuch a fan-

Digitized by Google

taſticall Confuter, that it ſhould haue beene one of my May-games, or Auguſt triumphes, to haue driuen / Officials, Commiſſaries, Archdeacons, Deanes, Chauncellors, Suffraganes, Biſhops, and Archbiſhops, (ſo Martin would haue floriſhed at the leaſt) to entertaine ſuch an odd, light-headded fellow for their defence; a profeſſed ieſter, a Hick-ſcorner, a ſcoff-maiſter, a playmunger, an Interluder; once the foile of Oxford, now the ſtale of London, and euer the Apeſclogg of the preſſe, *Cum Priuilegio perennitatis.* Had it not bene a better courſe, to haue followed Ariſtotles doctrine: and to haue confuted leuity with grauity, vanity with diſcretion, raſhnes with aduiſe, madneſſe with ſobriety, fier with water, ridiculous Martin with reuerend Cooper? Eſpecially in Eccleſiaſticall cauſes: where it goeth hard, when Scoggin, the Iouiall foole, or Skelton, the Malancholy foole, or Elderton, the bibbing foole, or Will Sommer the chollericke foole, muſt play the feate; and Church-matters cannot bee diſcuſſed without rancke ſcurrility, and as it were a Synode of Diapaſon fooles. Some few haue a ciuill pleaſant vaine, and a dainety ſplene without ſcandale: ſome ſuch percaſe might haue repayed the Marr-prelate home to good purpoſe: other obſcenity, or vanity confuteth itſelfe, and impeacheth the cauſe. As good forbeare an irregular foole, as beare a foole hetero-

Digitized by Google

clitall: and better abide a comparitiue knaue, that pretendeth religion, then ſuffer a knaue ſuperlatiue, that ſetteth cocke on hoope. Serious matters would be handeled ſeriouſly, not vpon ſimplicity, but vppon choice; not to fleſh, or animate, but to diſgrace, and ſhame Leuity. A glicking *Pro*, and a frumping *Contra*, ſhall haue much-adoe to ſhake handes in the *Ergo*. There is no ende of girdes, & bobbes: it is ſound Argumentes, and grounded Authorities, that muſt ſtrike the definitiue ſtroke, and decide the controuerſy, with mutuall ſatisfaction. Martin bee wiſe, though / Browne were a foole: and Papp-hatchet be honeſt, though Barrow be a knaue: it is not your heauing, or hoiſing coile, that buildeth-vpp the walles of the Temple. Alas poore miſerable deſolate moſt-woefull Church, had it no other builders, but ſuch architects of their owne fantaſies, and ſuch maiſons of infinite contradiction. Time, informed by ſecrete intelligence, or reſolued by curious diſcouery, ſpareth no coſt, or trauaile, to preuent Miſchiefe: but employeth her two woorthy Generals, Knowledge, & Induſtry, to cleere the coaſt of vagarant errours in Doctrine; and to ſcoure the ſea of rouing corruptions in Diſcipline. Roome was not reared-vpp in one day; nor cannot be pulled downe in one day. A perfect Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline, or autentique

Digitized by Google

Pollicy of the Church, (that may auowe, I haue neither more, nor leſſe, then enough; but iuſt the nomber, weight, and meaſure of exact gouernement) is not the worke of One man whoſoeuer, or of one age whatſoeuer: it requireth an incredible-great iudgement: exceeding-much reading in Eccleſiaſticall hiſtories, Councels, Decrees, Lawes: long, and ripe practiſe in Church-cauſes. Platformes offer themſelues to euery working conceit; and a few Tables, or Abridgements are ſoone diſpatched: but, whatſoeuer pretext may coulerably bee alledged, vndoubtedly they attempt, they know not what, and enterpriſe aboue the poſſibility of their reach, that imagine they can in a Pamflet, or two, contriue ſuch an omniſufficient, and incorruptible Method of Eccleſiaſticall gouernement, as could not by any priuate meditation, or publike occaſion be found-out, with the ſtuddy, or practiſe of fifteene hundred yeeres. I am not to diſpute, as a profeſſed Deuine; or to determine, as a ſeuere Cenſour: but a ſcholler may deliuer his opinion with reaſon: and a frend may lend / his aduiſe at occaſion: eſpecially when hee is vrged to ſpeake, or ſuſpected for ſilence. They muſt licence mee to diſſent from them, that autoriſe thẽſelues to diſagree from ſo many notable, and woorthy men, in the common reputation of ſo long a ſpace. They condemne ſuperſtitious, &

Digitized by Google

credulous ſimplicity: it were a fond ſimplicity to defende it, where it ſwarueth from the Trueth, or ſtrayeth out-of the way: but diſcretion can as little commend opiniotiue and preiudicate aſſertions, that ſtriue for a needeleſſe, and daungerous Innouation. It is neither the Exceſſe, nor the Defect, but the Meane, that edifyeth. Plato comparing Ariſtotle, and Xenocrates togither; Xenocrates, quoth he, needeth a ſpurre: Ariſtotle a Bridle. And if Princes, or Parlaments want a goade, may not Subiects, or Admonitions want a ſnaffle? Is there pretence, for Libertie to aduiſe the wiſeſt, or for Zeale to pricke-forward the higheſt: and no reaſon for Prudence to curbe Raſhneſſe, or for Autoritie to reane Licentiousneſſe? May Iudgement be whoodwinked with friuolous traditions: and cannot Phantaſie be enueigled with newfangled conceites? Superſtition, and Credulitie, are ſimple Creatures: but what are Contempt, and Tumult? What is the principall cauſe of this whole Numantine Warre, but affectation of Nouelty, without ground? If all without exception, from the very ſchollers of the Primitiue, and heroical ſchoole, wanted knowledge, or zeale: how rare, and ſingular are their bleſſinges, that haue both, in ſo plentifull, and incomparable meaſure? Aſſuredly there were many excellent witts, illuminate minds, and deuout ſoules before them: if

Digitized by Google

nothing matchable with them, what greater Maruell in this age? Or if they were not rightly diſciplined, that liued ſo Vertuouſly, and Chriſtianly togither; what an ineſtimable treaſure is founde, & what a cleere fountaine of holy life? Where are godly minds become, that they embrace not that ſacred ſocietie? What aile Religious handes that they ſtay from building-vpp the Cittie of God? Can Platos Republique, and Mores Vtopia winne hartes: and cannot the heauenly Hieruſalem conquer ſoules? Can there be a greater impietie, then to hinder the rearing-vp of thoſe celeſtiall walles? why forgetteth the groſe Church, that it ought to be the pure kingdome of heauen? To zeale, euen ſpeede is delay; / and a yeare, an age. But how maturely, and iudiciouſly ſome buſie motions haue bene conſidered-vpon, by their hoat ſollicitours, it would not paſſe vnexamined. A ſtrong Diſcipline ſtandeth not vpon feeble feete: and a weake foundation will neuer beare the weight of a mightie Hieruſalem. The great ſhoulders of Atlas oftentimes ſhrinke and faint vnder the great burden of heauen. The Tabernacle of Moſes; the Temple of Salomon; the Golden Age of the Primitiue Church; and the ſiluer regiment of Conſtantine, would be looked-into, with a ſharper, and cleerer eye. The difference of Commonwealthes, or regiments, re-

Digitized by Google

quireth a difference of lawes, and orders: and thoſe lawes, and orders are moſt ſouerain, that are moſt agreable to the regiment, and beſt proportioned to the Commonwealth. The matter of Elections, and offices, is a principall matter in queſtion: and how many not onely ignorant, or curious, but learned, and conſiderate wits, haue loſt themſelues, and founde errour, in the diſcourſe of that ſubiect? But how compendiouſly might it be concluded, that is ſo infinitly argued; or how quietly decided, that is ſo tumultuouſly debated? I relye not vpon the vncertaintie of diſputable rules; or the ſubtilitie of intricate arguments; or the ambiguitie of doubtfull allegations; or the caſualtie of fallible experiments: but grounde my reſolution vpon the aſſurance of ſuch politique, and Eccleſiaſticall Principles, as in my opinion can neither be deceiued groſely, nor deceiue dangerouſly. Popular Elections, and offices, aſwell in Churches, as in Commonwealthes, are for popular ſtates: Monarchies, and Ariſtocraties, are to celebrate their elections, and offices, according to their forme of gouernement, and the beſt correſpondence of their ſtates, Ciuill, and Eccleſiaſticall: and may iuſtifie their / good proceeding by good diuinitie. As they grauely, and religiouſly prooued, that in the floriſhing propagation, and mightie encreaſe of the Catholique Church vnder Princes, before,

Digitized by Google

in, and after the Empire of Conſtãtine, were driuen to varie from ſome primitiue Exãples: not by vnlawfull corruptiõ, as is ignorãtly ſurmiſed; but by lawfull prouiſiõ, according to the exigence of occaſions, & neceſſitie of alteration in thoſe ouerruling caſes: as appeareth by pregnant euidence of Eccleſiaſticall hiſtories, and Canons; wherewith they are to conſult, that affect a deepe inſight in the deciſiõ of ſuch controuerſies; & not to leape at all aduentures, before they haue looked about thẽ, aſwell backward, as forward, & aſwell of the one ſide, as of the other. Conſideration is a good Counſellour: & Reading, no badd Remẽbrancer; eſpecially, in the moſt eſſentiall Common-places of Doctrine, and the moſt important matters of Gouernement. Ignorance may ſome way be the father of Zeale, as it was wont to be termed the moother of Deuotion: but blind men ſwallow-downe many flyes; and none more, then many of them, that imagin they know all, and conceit an abſolute omniſufficiencie in their owne platformes, with an vniuerſall contempt of whatſoeuer contradiction, ſpeciall, or generall, moderne, or auncient: when vndoubtedly they are to ſeeke in a thouſand points of requiſite, and neceſſarie conſideration. Lord, that men ſhould ſo pleaſe, and flatter themſelues in their owne deuiſes: as if none had eyes, but they. God neuer beſtowed his diuine giftes in vayne:

Digitized by Google

they are not ſo lightly to be reiected, that ſo grauely demeaned themſelues, inſtructed their brethren, reclaimed infidels, conquered countryes, planted Churches, confounded Heretiques, and inceſſantly trauailed in Gods cauſes, with the whole deuotion of / their ſoules: howſoeuer ſome can be content to thinke, that ſince the Apoſtles, none euer had the ſpirit of Vnderſtanding, or the mindes of ſincerity, but themſelues. Pardon me, pure intelligences, and incorruptible mindes. The auncient Fathers, and Doctors of the Church, wanted neither learning, nor iudgement, nor conſcience, nor zeale: as ſome of their Greeke, and Latin woorkes very notably declare: (if they were blinde, happy men that ſee :) and what wiſer Senates, or hollyer Congregations, or any way more reuerent aſſemblies, then ſome Generall, and ſome Prouinciall Councels? Where they to a ſuperficiall opinion, ſeeme to ſett-vpp a Gloſſe, againſt, or beſide the Text; it would bee conſidered, what their conſiderations were; and whether it can appeare, that they directly, or indirectly proceeded without a reſpectiue regard of the Commōwealth, or a tender care of the Church, or a reuerend examination of that Text. For I pray God, we loue the Text no worſe, from the bottome of our hartes, then ſome of them did. They are not the ſimpleſt, or diſſoluteſt men, that thinke, Diſcretion might haue leaue to cutt his

Digitized by Google

coate according to his cloth; and commend their humility, patience, wiſdome, and whole conformity, that were ready to accept any requiſite order not vnlawfull, and to admitt any decent, or ſeemely rites of indifferent nature. Put the caſe, iuſt as it was then, and in thoſe countries; and what if ſome ſuppoſe, that euen M. Caluin, M. Beza, M. Meluin, or M. Cartwright, (notwithſtanding their new deſeignementes) being in the ſame eſtate, wherein they were then, and in thoſe countries, would haue reſolued no otherwiſe in effect, then they determined. Or if they did not ſo perfectly well, I pray God we may. Howbeit none ſo fitt to reconcile contradictions, or to accord differences, as hee that / diſtinguiſheth Times, Places, Occaſions, and other ſwaying Circumſtances; high pointes in gouernement, either Ciuill, or Eccleſiaſticall. As in the doubtfull Paragraphs, and Canons of the Law of man; ſo in the myſticall oracles of the Law of God; *Qui benè diſtinguit, benè docet*: in the one, when hee vſeth no diſtinction but of the Law, or ſome reaſon equipollent to the Law: in the other, when he interpreteth the Scripture by the Scripture, either expreſly by conference of Text with Text, or collectiuely by the rule of Analogy. In caſes indifferent, or arbitrary, what ſo equall in generall, as Indifferency: or ſo requiſite in ſpeciall, as conformity to the poſitiue Lawe, to

Digitized by Google

the cuſtome of the Countrey, or to the preſent occaſion? To be peruerſe, or obſtinate without neceſſary cauſe, is a peeuiſh folly: when by ſuch a duetyfull, and iuſtifiable order of proceeding, as by a ſacred League, ſo infinite Variances, and contentions may be compounded. To the cleane, all thinges are cleane. S. Paule, that layed his foundation like a wiſe architect, and was a ſingular frame of diuinity, (omniſufficiently furniſhed to be a Doctour of the Nations, & a Conuertour of People) became all vnto all, and as it were a Chriſtian Mercury, to winne ſome. Oh, that his Knowledge, or Zeale were as rife, as his Name: and I would to God, ſome could learne to behaue themſelues toward Princes, and Magiſtrates, as Paul demeaned himſelfe, not onely before the King Agrippa, but alſo before the twoo Romane Procuratours of that Prouince, Felix, and Feſtus: whome he entreated in honourable termes, albeit ethnicke gouernours. Were none more ſcrupulous, then S. Paul, how eaſily, and gratiouſly might diuers Confutations bee reconciled, that now rage, like Ciuill Warres? The chiefeſt matter in queſtion, is no article of beliefe, but a point of pollicy, / or gouernement: wherin a Iudiciall Equity being duely obſerued, what letteth but the particular Lawes, Ordinances, Iniunctions, and whole manner of Iuriſdiction, may reſt in the diſpoſition of Soue-

Digitized by Google

raine Autoritie? Whoſe immediate, or mediate actes, are to be reuerenced with Obedience, not countermaunded with ſedition, or controled with contention. He is a bold ſubiect, that attempteth to binde the handes of ſacred Maieſty: and they loue controuerſies well, I trow, that call their Princes proceedinges into Controuerſie. Altercations, and Paradoxes, aſwell in Diſcipline, as in Doctrine, were neuer ſo curiouſly curious, or ſo infinitely infinite: but when all is done, and when Innouation hath ſett the beſt countenance of proofe, or perſuaſion, vpon the matter; Kingdomes will ſtand, and Free-Citties muſt be content. Their Courts, are no Preſidents for Royall Courts: their Councels, no inſtructions for the Councels of Kings, or Queenes: their Conſiſtories, that would maſter Princes, no informations for the Conſiſtories vnder Princes: their Diſcipline, no Canon, or platforme for ſoueraine gouernement, either in Cauſes Temporall or Spirituall. And can you blame them, that maruell, how of all other Tribunals, or benches, that Iewiſh Synedrion, or Pontificall Conſiſtory ſhould ſo exceedingly grow in requeſt, that put Chriſt himſelfe to death, and was a whipp for his deereſt Apoſtles? I am loth to enter the liſtes of argumentation, or diſcourſe, with any obſtinate minde, or violent witt, that weeneth his owne Conceit, a cleere Sunne without Eclipſe, or a full Moone

Digitized by Google

without wanes: but ſith Importunacy will neuer linne moleſting Parliaments, and Princes, with Admonitions, Aduertiſements, Motions, Petitions, Repetitions, Sollicitations, Declamations, Diſcourſes, Methods, Flatteries, Menaces, and / all poſſible inſtant meanes of enforcing, and extorting the preſent Practiſe of their incorruptible Theorie; it would be ſom-bodies taſke, to holde them a little occupied, till a greater Reſolution begin to ſub-ſcribe, & a ſurer Prouiſion to execute. May it therefore pleaſe the buſieſt of thoſe, that debarre Eccleſiaſticall perſons of all Ciuill iuriſdiction, or temporall function, to conſider; how euery pettie *Pariſh*, in England, to the number of about 5200. more, or leſſe, may be made a Ieruſalem, or Metropolitan Sea, like the nobleſt Cittie of the Orient, (for ſo Pliny calleth Ieruſalem): how euery *Miniſter* of the ſayd Pariſhes, may be promoted to be an high Prieſt, and to haue a Pontificall Conſiſtorie: how euery *Aſſiſtant* of that Conſiſtorie, may emprooue himſelfe an honorable, or worſhip-full Senior, according to his reuerend calling: (for not onely the Princes of Families, or the Princes of Tribes, but the Princes of Citties, or Iudges, the Decurions, the Quinquagenarians, the Centurians, the Chiliarkes, were inferiour Officiers to the Seniors): how a *Princely and Capitall Court*, and euen the high Councell of Parlament, or

Digitized by Google

ſupreme Tribunall of a Royall Cittie, (for there was no Seniorie in Iudæa, but at Ieruſalem; ſauing when the Proconſul Gabinius, in a Romane Pollicy deuided that nation into fiue parts, and appointed foure other Conſiſtories), how ſuch a Princely, and ſtately Court, ſhould be the patterne of a *Preſbitery in a poore Pariſh*: how the Principalitie or *Põtificalitie of* a *Miniſter* according to the degenerate Sanedrim, ſhould be ſett-vpp, when the *Lordſhip of a Biſhop*, or Archbiſhop, according to their poſition, is to be pulled-downe: finally how the *ſupremacie ouer Kings*, and Emperours ſhould be taken from the higheſt Prieſt, or *Pope*, to be beſtowed vpon an *ordinarie Miniſter*, or Curate: and how / that Miniſter ſhould diſpenſe with Ariſtotles *Law of inſtrumẽts*, ἔνκρος ἐν: or become more mighty then Hercules, that could not encounter *two charges att once:* or at leaſt how that Ciuil Court, that *meere Ciuill Court*, for ſo it was; before it declined frõ the firſt inſtitutiõ; euen as meerly ciuill, as the Romane Senate) ſhould be transformed into a Court *meerly Eccleſiaſticall.* When theſe points are conſidered; if withall it be determined by euidẽt demõſtration, as cleere as the Sunne, and as inuincible as Gods-word, that whatſoeuer the Apoſtles did for their time, is immutably perpetuall, and neceſſarie for all times: and that nothing by way of ſpeciall

Digitized by Google

reſpect, or preſent occaſiõ, is left to the ordinaunce, diſpoſitiõ, or prouiſiõ of the Church, but the ſtrict and preciſe practiſe of their Primitiue Diſcipline, according to ſome Precepts in S. Paules Epiſtles, and a few Examples in the Actes of the Apoſtles: *So be it*, muſt be the ſuffrage of vs, that haue no Voyce in the Sanedrim. All is concluded in a fewe pregnant propoſitions: we ſhall not neede to trouble, or entangle our wittes with many Articles, Iniunctions, Statutes, or other ordinances: the Generall, Prouinciall, and Epiſcopall Councels, loſt much good labour in their Canons, Decrees, and whatſoeuer Eccleſiaſticall Conſtitutions: the workes of the fathers, and Doctours, howſoeuer auncient, learned, or Orthodoxall, are little, or nothing worth: infinite ſtuddies, writings, commentaries, treatiſes, conferences, conſultations, diſputations, diſtinctions, concluſions of the moſt-notable Schollers in Chriſtendome, altogither ſuperfluous. Well-worth a fewe reſolute Aphoriſmes; that diſpatch more in a word, then could be boulted-out in fiften hundred yeares; and roundly determine all with an *Vpſy-downe.* No reformation without an Vpſy-downe. In deede that is one of Ma/chiauels Poſitions: and ſeeing it is prooued a peece of ſound doctrine, it muſt not be gain-ſayd. Euery head, that hath a hand, pull-downe the pride of Biſhops, and ſet vp the humilitie of Miniſters.

Digitized by Google

Diogenes treade vpon Platos pompe. An vniuerſall reformation be proclaimed with the ſounde of a Iewes-trumpe: let the Pontificall Conſiſtorie be erected in euery Pariſh: let the high Prieſt, or Archbiſhop of euery Pariſh, be enſtalled in Moſes Chaier, (it was Moſes, not Aarons Chayer, that they challenge in their Senate: & he muſt be greater then Hercules, that can fulfill both): let the Miniſterie be a Royall Prieſthood; and the dominiõ of his Segniorie, raigne like a Preſbiter Iohn: let it euerlaſtingly be recorded for a ſouerain Rule, as deare as a Iewes eye, that Ioſephus alledgeth out-of the Law; *Nihil agat Rex, ſine Pontificis, & Seniorum ſententia.* Onely let the ſayd Pontife beware, he prooue not a great Pope in a little Roome; or diſcouer not the humour of aſpiring Stukely, that would rather be the king of a moulhill, then the ſecond in Ireland, or England. Some Stoiques, and melancholie perſons haue a ſpice of ambition by themſelues: and euen *Iunius Brutus* the firſt, was ſomway a kinde of *Tarquinius Superbus*: and *Iunius Brutus* the ſecond, is not altogither a mortified Creature, but bewrayeth as it were ſome reliques of fleſhe, and bloud, aſwell as his inwardeſt frend *Euſebius Philadelphus.* I dare come no neerer: yet Greenwood, and Barrow begin already to complaine of ſurly, and ſolemne brethren: and God knoweth

Digitized by Google

how that Pontificall chayer of eſtate, might worke in man, as he is man. Mercurie ſublimed, is ſomewhat a coy, and ſtout fellow: and I beleeue, thoſe high, and mighty Peeres, would not ſticke, to looke for a low, and humble legge. Euery / man muſt haue his due in his place: and honour aliably belongeth to redoubted Seniours. That is their proper title at Geneua. Now if it ſeeme as cleere a caſe in Pollicie, as in Diuinitie; that one, and the ſame Diſcipline may ſerue diuers, and contrarie formes of regiment, and be as fitt for the head of England, as for the foote of Geneua: The worſt is, Ariſtotles Politiques muſt be burned for heretiques. But how happie is the age, that in ſtead of a thouſand Poſitiue Lawes, and Leſbian Canons, hath founde one ſtanding Canon of Polycletus, an immutable Law of ſacred gouernement? And what a bliſſefull deſtinie had the Commonwealth, that muſt be the Modell of all other Commonwealthes, and the very Center of the Chriſtian world? Let it be ſo for euer, and euer, if that *Pamflet of the Lawes, and Statutes of Geneua*, aſwell concerning the Eccleſiaſticall Diſcipline, as Ciuill regiment; deſerue any ſuch ſingular, or extraordinarie eſtimation, either for the one, or for the other. If not; are they not buſie men, that will needes beare a rule, and ſtrike a maine ſtroke, where they haue nothing to doe,

Digitized by Google

or are to be ruled? It were a good hearing in my eare, that ſome of them could gouerne themſelues, but in reaſonable wiſe ſort, that are ſo forward to ſwey kingdomes, and to ſwing Churches after their new faſhion; and can ſtande vpon no grounde, but their owne. If certaine of them be godlyer, or learneder, then many other, (according to their fauorableſt reputation,) it is the better for them: I would alſo, they were wiſer, then ſome of them, whom they impugne. Surely I feare, they will be founde more peremptorie in Cenſure, then ſounde in Iudgement; and more ſmart in reproofe, then ſharpe in proofe. And may it not be a probable doubt, how they haue compared togither the *Law* of Gods people, *and the Goſpell* / of Chriſtes Church in the Bible: or how they haue ſtuddied *Ioſephus*, *Philo*, & *Egeſippus* of the Iewiſh affaires; or *Sigonius* of the Hebrue Commonwealth; or *Freigius* his Moſaicus; or their owne *Bonauentura* of the Iudaicall Pollicy; that fetch their Iurisdiction from the *Sanedrim* corrupted; and ground their Reformation vpon the Iewes *Thalmud*, the next neighbour to the Turkes *Alcoran*. Had *Ramus* Treatiſe of Diſcipline come to light, they would long-ere-this haue beene aſhamed of their Sanedrim, and haue bluſhed to foiſt-in the Thalmud, in ſteede of the Bible. God helpe poore Diſcipline, if the water bee like the Conduit, the

Digitized by Google

Oile like the Lampe, and the Plant like the Tree. Abraham was the beginning: Dauid the middeſt: and Chriſt the ende of the Hebrue hiſtory: his Goſpell, not his ennemies Thalmud, the pure fountaine of reformation, and the onely cleere reſplendiſhing Sunne, that giueth light to the ſtarres of heauen, & earth; vnto which the Church, his moſt deere and ſweete ſpouſe, is more deepely, and more incomprehenſibly bounden, then the day vnto the Sunne, that ſhineth from his gliſtering chariot. It is not for a Pontificall Seniory or a Mechanicall Elderſhip, to ſtopp the courſe of any riuer, that ſucceſſiuely floweth from that liquid fountaine: or to putt-out any Candle, that was originally lighted at that inextinguible Lampe. The Church hath ſmall cauſe, to dote vppon the Cooſen-germane of Tyranny: and the Commonwealth hath no great affection to the Sworn-brother of Anarchy. Certainely States neede not long to interteine tumultuous, and neuer-ſatisfied Innouation. And I hope he was not greatly vnaduiſed, that being demaunded his opinion of the Elderſhip in queſtion; anſwered, he conceiued of the *Elderſhip*, (as it is intended, and motioned in England) as he thought of the *Elder-tree*, that whatſoeuer it appeared in ſhewe, it would in triall prooue fruteleſſe, ſeedeleſſe, bitter, fraile, troublous, and a friend to ſurging waues,

Digitized by Google

and tempeſtuous ſtormes. And being further preſſed touching the forward Zeale of dowtie Martin Seniour, liuely Martin Iuniour, pert Penry, luſty Barrow, and ſome other bragge Reformiſtes: (for that rowling ſtone of Innouation was neuer ſo turled and tumbled, as ſince thoſe buſie limmes began to rowſe, and beſturre them, more then all the Pragmatiques in Europe): when young Phaeton, quoth he, in a preſumptuous reſolution would needes rule the Chariot of the Sunne, as it might be the Temple of Apollo, or the Church of S. Paule, or ſome greater Prouince (for the greater Prouince, Commonwealth, or Monarchy, the fitter for Phaetons reformation): his ſuddaine ruine miniſtred matter of moſt lamentable teares, to his deare mother, and louing Siſters: in ſomuch, that they were pittifully chaunged, as ſome write, into *Elder-trees*, as ſome, into *Poplars*. *Sic fleuit Clymene: ſic & Clymeneides altæ:* as it might be the mournefull Church and her wailing members, wofully tranſmewed into *Elders*, or *Poplars*. Good my Maſters, either make it an euident, and infallible caſe, without ſophiſticall wrangling, or perſonall brawling; that your vnexperienced Diſcipline, not the order approoued, is the pure / well of that diuine Spring, and the cleere light of that heauenly Sunne: or I beſeech you, pacifie yourſelues, and

Digitized by Google

ſurceaſe to endaunger kingdomes with vnneedefull vprores. Crooked proceedings would be rectified by a right, not a crooked line: and Abuſes reformed, not by abuſing the perſons, but by well-vſing the things thẽſelues. I ſpare my auncients, aſwell at home as abroade: yet Beza might haue bene good to ſome Doctours of the Church; and better then he is, to *Ramus*, *Eraſtus*, *Kemnitius*, and ſundry other excellent men of this age: (neither can it ſufficiently appeare, that the two famous Lawyers, *Gribaldus*, and *Baldwinus*, were ſuch monſtrous Apoſtataes, or poyſonous Heretiques, as he reporteth): and whither ſome other, neerer hand, haue not bene too-familiarly bold with their Superiours, of approoued learning, and wiſedome, meete for their reuerend, and honorable calling; my betters Iudge.

Modeſty is a Ciuil Vertue, and Humility a Chriſtian quality: Surely Martin is too too-malapert to be diſcreet; and Barrow too too-hoat, to bee wiſe: if they be godly, God helpe Charity: but in my opiniõ they little wot, what a Chaos of diſorders, confuſions, & abſurdities they breed, that ſweat to build a reformation in a monarchy, vpon a popular foundation, or a mechanicall plott; & will needes be as fiery in execution, euen to wring the Clubb out-of Hercules hand, as they were aëry in reſolution. Alas, that wiſe men, and

Digitized by Google

reformers of ſtates (I know not a weightier Prouince) ſhould once imagine, to finde it a matter of as light conſequence, to ſeniorife in a realme, ouer the greateſt Lordes, and euen ouer the highneſſe of Maieſtie; as in a towne, ouer a company of meane marchantes, and meaner artificers. I will not ſticke, to make the beſt of it. M. Caluin, / the founder of the plott, (whome Beza ſtileth the great Caluin) had reaſon to eſtabliſh his miniſtery againſt Inconſtancy, and to fortify himſelfe againſt Faction (as he could beſt deuiſe, and compaſſe with the aſſiſtance of his French party, and other fauorites) by encroaching vpon a mechanicall, and mutinous people, from whoſe variable and fickle mutability he could no otherwiſe aſſecure himſelfe. As he ſenſibly found not onely by dayly experiences of their giddy and factious nature, but alſo by his owne expulſion, and baniſhment: whome after a little triall, (as it were for a dainety nouelty, or ſly experiment) they could be content to vſe as kindly, and loyally, as they had vſed the old Biſhopp, their lawfull Prince. Could M. Cartwright, or M. Trauerſe ſeaze vpon ſuch a Citty, or any like popular towne, Heluetian or other, where Democraty ruleth the roſt: they ſhould haue ſome-bodies good leaue to prouide for their owne ſecurity; and to take their beſt aduauntage vppon tickle

Digitized by Google

Cantons. Some one peraduenture in time would canton them well-enough ; and giue a ſhrewd pull at a Metropolitan Sea, as ſoueraine, as the old Biſhoprike of Geneua. It were not the firſt time, that a Democraty by degrees hath prooued an Ariſtocraty ; an Ariſtocraty degenerated into an Oligarchy ; an Oligarchy amounted to a Tyranny, or Principality. No Rhetorique Climax ſo artificiall, as that Politique Gradation. But in a iuſt kingdome, where is other good aſſuraunce for Miniſters, and meeter Councels for Princes, then ſuch ſwarmes of imperious Elderſhips ; it is not for ſubiectes to vſurpe, as Commaunders may tiranniſe in a ſmall territory. Vnleſſe they meane to ſett-vp a generall Deformation, in lieu of an Vniuerſall Reformation; and to bring-in an order, that would ſoone prooue a diluge of diſorder ; an ouerflow of Anarchy ; / and an open Fludgate, to drowne Pollicy with licentioufnes, nobility with obſcurity, and the honour of realmes with the baſeneſſe of Cantons. They that long for the bane, and plague of their Country, pray for that many-hedded, and Cantoniſh reformation: in iſſue good for none, but the high Iudges of the Conſiſtory, and their appropriate Creatures: as I will iuſtify at large, in caſe I be euer particularly challenged. I am no pleader for the regiment of the feete ouer the head, or the gouernement of the

Digitized by Google

ſtomacke over the hart: ſurely nothing can bee more pernitious in practiſe, or more miſerable in concluſion, then a commaunding autority in them, that are borne to obey, ordained to liue in priuate condition, made to follow their occupations, and bound to homage. You that be ſchollars, moderate your inuention with iudgement: and you that be reaſonable gentlemen, pacify your ſelues with reaſon. If it be an iniury, to encloſe Commons; what iuſtice is it, to lay open encloſures? and if Monarchies muſt ſuffer popular ſtates to enioy their free liberties, and ampleſt fraunchiſes, without the leaſt infringment, or abridgment: is there no congruence of reaſon, that popular ſtates ſhould giue Monarchies leaue, to vſe their Poſitiue lawes, eſtabliſhed orders, and Royall Prerogatiues, without diſturbance, or confutation? Bicauſe meaner Miniſters, then Lordes, may become a popular Cittie, or territorie; muſt it therefore be an abſurditie in the maieſty of a kingdome, to haue ſome Lordes ſpirituall amongſt ſo many temporall: aſwell for the fitter correspondence and combination of both degrees; their more reuerend priuate direction in matters of conſcience; their weightier publique Counſell in Parlaments and Synods; the firmer aſſurance of the Clergie in their cauſes; and the more honorable eſti / mation of Religion in all reſpectes; as

Digitized by Google

for the ſolemner viſitation of their Dioces, & other competent Iuriſdiction. It is Tyrannie, or vainglorie, not reuerend Lordſhip, that the Scripture condemneth. There were Biſhops, or as ſome will haue them termed, Superintendents, with Epiſcopall ſuperioritie, and iuriſdiction; in the golden age of the Apoſtles: *Timothie* of Epheſus; *Titus* of Crete; *Marke* of Alexandria; *Iames* of Ieruſalem; *Philemon* of Gaza; the eloquent *Apollos* of Cæſarea: *Euodius* of Antioche; *Soſipater* of Iconium, according to Dorotheus, of Theſſalonica, according to Origene; *Tychicus* of Chalcedon; *Ananias* of Damaſcus: and ſo forth. Diuers of the auncient Fathers, and Doctours, aſwell of the Orientall, as of the Occidentall Churches, were Biſhops, reuerend Fathers in Chriſt, and ſpirituall Lordes. The ſame ſtile, or title of reuerence, hath ſucceſſiuely continued to this age, without any empeachment of value, or contradiction of note; ſauing that of the angrie Malcontent, and prowd heretique Aërius, ſcarſely worth the naming. What cruell outrage hath it lately committed, or what haynous indignitie hath it newly admitted, (more then other aduauncementes of Vertue, or ſtiles of honour,) that it ſhould now be cancelled, or abandoned in all haſt? Would God, ſome were no ſtouter, or hawtier without the title, then ſome are with it? Many temporall Lordes, Dukes, Princes,

Digitized by Google

Kinges, and Emperours, haue ſhowen very-notable effectuall examples of Chriſtian humilitie: and may not ſpirituall Lordes carrie ſpirituall mindes? I hope, they do: I know, ſome doe: I am ſuer, all may; notwithſtanding their ordinarie title, or an hundred plauſible Epithits. I would the Lordſhip, or pompe of Biſhops, were the greateſt abuſe in Commonwealthes, or Churches. I fear me, I ſhall neuer liue to / ſee ſo happie a world vpon the Earth, that aduiſed Reformation ſhould haue nothing worſe to complaine-off, then that Lordſhip, or pompe. What may be, or is amiſſe, in any degree; I defend not: (the delict of ſome one, or two Prelates, were it manifeſt, ought not to redounde to the damage, or detriment of the Church): what may ſtande with the honour of the realme; with the benefite of the Church; with the approbation of antiquitie, and with the Canon of the Scripture, I haue no reaſon to impugne, or abridge. I haue more cauſe to ſuſpect that ſome earneſt dealers might be perſuaded to diſpenſe with the name of Lordſhip in Biſhops, on condition, themſelues might be the parties: that would not ſecularlie abuſe the title to any priuate pompe, or vanitie, but religiouſlie applie it to the publique adminiſtration of the Churche, according to the firſt inſtitution. Were dalliance ſafe in ſuch caſes; I could wiſhe the experiment in a perſon, or

Digitized by Google

two, in whoſe complexions I haue ſome inſight. Doctour Humfry of Oxford, and Doctour Fulke of Cambridge, two of their ſtandard-bearers a long time, grew conformable in the end, as they grew riper in experience, and ſager in iudgement: and why may not ſuch, and ſuch, in the like, or weightier reſpectes, condeſcend to a like toleration of matters Adiaphorall? Sith it will be no otherwiſe (maugre all Admonitions, or whatſoeuer zealous Motiues) better relent with fauour, then refiſt in vayne. Were any fayre offer of prefermēt, handſomely tendered vnto ſome, that gape not greedily after promotion, nor can-away with this-ſame ſeruile waiting, or plauſible courting for liuing: I doubt not but wiſe men would ſee what were good for themſelues, commodious for their frendes, and conuenient for the Church. If they ſhould obſtinatly refuſe / Deaneryes, and Biſhoprickes; I ſhould verely beleeue, they are mooued with ſtronger arguments, and pregnanter autorities, then any, they haue yet publiſhed in Print, or vttered in diſputation: and I would be very glad to conferre with them, for my inſtruction. Sound reaſons, & autenticall quotations may preuayle much: & no ſuch inuincible defence, as the armour of Proofe. In the mean time, the cauſe may be remembred, that incenſed the foreſayd factious malcontent, Aërius, to maintaine

Digitized by Google

the equalitie of Bifhops, and other Prieftes, when himfelfe failed in his ambitious fuite for a Bifhopricke: and all refteth vpon a cafe of confcience, as nice and fqueamifh a fcruple with fome zealous Marr-prelates, as whither the Fox in fome good refpects, might be woon to eate grapes. They that would pregnantly try Conclufions, might peraduenture finde fuch a temptation, the materialleft and learnedeft Confutation, that hath yet bene Imprinted. Melancholie is deepely wife; and Choler refolutely ftout: they muft perfuade them effentially, and feelingly, that will mooue them effectually. Were they entreated to yeelde, other arguments would fubfcribe of their owne gentle accord; and ingenuoufly confefle, that Opinion is not to preiudice the Truth, or Faction to derogate from Autoritie. Poffeffion was euer a ftrong defendant: and a iuft title maketh a puiffant aduerfarie. Bifhops will goouerne with reputatation, when Marr-Prelats muft obey with reuerence, or refift with contumacie. Errours in doctrine; corruptions in manners; and abufes in offices, would be reformed: but degrees of fuperioritie, and orders of obedience are needefull in all eftates: and efpecially in the Clergie as neceffarie, as the Sunne in the day, or the Moone in the night: or Cock-on-hoope, with a hundred / thoufand Curates in the world, would prooue a

Digitized by Google

mad Diſcipline. Let Order be the golden rule of proportion ; & I am as forward an Admonitioner, as any Preciſian in Ingland. If diſorder muſt be the Diſcipline, and confuſion the Reformatiõ, (as without difference of degrees, it muſt needes) I craue pardon. *Anarchie*, was neuer yet a good States-man : and *Ataxie*, will euer be a badd Church-man. That ſame luſtie Downefall, is too-hoat a Pollicie for my learning. They were beſt, to be content to let Biſhopricks ſtande, that would be loth to ſee Religion fall, or the Clergie troden vnder foote. He conceiueth little, that perceiueth not, what bondes hold the world in order, and what tenures maintaine an aſſurance in eſtates. Were Miniſters Stipendiaries, or Penſionars, (which hath alſo bene a wiſe motion) and all without diſtinction, alike eſteemed, that is, all without regard, alike contemned, & abiected, (which would be the iſſue of vnequal Equallity) ; woe to the poore Miniſtery : and the cunningeſt practiſe of the conſiſtorie, ſhould haue much-adoe, to ſtopp thoſe gapps, and recure thoſe ſores. Neuer a more ſuccourleſſe Orphan ; or a more deſolate widdow ; or a more diſtreſſed Pilgrim ; then ſuch a Miniſtery : vntill in a thirſty, & hungry zeale, it ſhould eftſoones retire to former prouiſions, & recoouer that aunciẽt Oeconomy Eccleſiaſticall. The ſureſt reuenue, & honorableſt

Digitized by Google

ſalary of that coate; much-better iwis, thē the ſouldiours pay, or the Seruing-mās wages. Equality, in things equall, is a iuſt Law: but a reſpectiue valuation of perſons, is the rule of Equity: & they little know, into what incōgruities, & abſurdities they runne headlong, that are weary of *Geometricall proportion*, or diſtributiue Iuſtice, in the collation of publique functions, offices, or promotions, ciuile, or ſpirituall. God beſtoweth his bleſſings with difference; / and teacheth his Lieutenant the Prince, to eſtimate, and preferre his ſubiectes accordingly. When better Autors are alledged for equalitie in perſons Vnequall; I will liue, and dye in defence of that equalitie; and honour *Arithmeticall Proportion*, as the onely ballance of Iuſtice, and ſole ſtandard of gouernement. Meane-while, they that will-be wiſer, then God, and their Prince, may continue a peeuiſh ſcrupuloſitie in ſubſcribing to their ordinances; and nurriſh a rebellious Contumacie, in refuſing their orders. I wiſh vnto my frendes, as vnto miſelfe: and recommende Learning to diſcretion, conceit to iudgment, zeale to knowledge, dutie to obedience, confuſion to order, Vncertaintie to aſſurance, and Vnlawfull noueltie to lawfull Vniformitie: the ſweeteſt repoſe, that the Common-wealth, or Church can enioy. *Regnum diuiſum*, a ſouerain Text; and what notabler

Digitized by Google

Gloſſe vpon a thouſand Texts? Or what more cordiall reſtoratiue of Boddy, or Soule, then, *Ecce quàm bonum, & quàm iucundum*? Sweet my maſters, be ſweet: and without the leaſt bitterneſſe of vnneceſſarie ſtrife, tender your affectionateſt deuotiõs of Zeale, and Honour, to the beſt contentment of your frends, your Patrons, your Prince, the Cõmonwealth, the Church, the Almightie: which ſo dearely looue, ſo bountifully maintaine, ſo mightily protect, ſo gratiouſly fauour, and ſo indulgentially tender you. Confounde not yourſelues: and what people this day more bleſſed, or what nation more flooriſhing? Some feruent, and many counterfait loouers, adore their miſtreſſes; and commit Idolatrie to the leaſt of their bewties: oh, that we knew what a Sacrifice, Obedience were; and what a Iewell of Iewells he offereth, that preſenteth Charitie. Without which, we may talke of Doctrine, and diſcourſe of Diſcipline: but Doctrine is a Parrat; / Discipline an Eccho; Reformation a ſhaddow; Sanctification a dreame without Charitie: in whoſe ſweet booſome Reconciliation harboureth; the deareſt frend of the Church, and the only Eſt Amen of ſo infinite Controuerſies. That Reconciliation ſettle itſelfe to examine matters barely, without their veales, or habiliments, according to the counſell of Marcus Aurelius: and to define

Digitized by Google

thinges ſimply, without any colours, or embelliſhments, according to the preceptes of Ariſtotle, and the examples of Ramus: and the moſt-endleſſe altercations; being generally rather Verbal, then reall, and more circumſtantiall, then ſubſtantiall: will ſoone grow to an ende. Which end humanitie haſten, if there be any ſpice of humanitie; diuinitie diſpatch, if there be any remnant of diuinitie; heauen accompliſh, if the graces of heauen be not locked-vpp; and Earth embrace, if reconciliation hath not forſaken the Earth. If Falſhood be weake, as it is weake, why ſhould it longer hold-vpp head: and if Truth be truth, that is, great and mightie, why ſhould it not preuayle? Moſt-excellent Truth, ſhow thiſelfe in thy victorious Maieſtie; and mauger whatſoeuer encounter of witt, learning, or furie, preuayle puiſſantly.

Theſe Notes, if they happen to ſee light, are eſpecially intended to the particular Vſe of a fewe, whom in affectionate good-will I would wiſh to ſtay their wiſedomes. Did I not entirely pittie their caſe, and extraordinarily fauour ſome commendable partes in them, they ſhould not eaſely haue coſt me halfe thus many lines; euery one worſe beſtowed, then other, if conſtancie in errour, be a creddit; in diſobedience, a bonde; in vice, a vertue; in miſerie, a felicitie. He that writt the

Digitized by Google

premiſſes, affecteth Truth, as preciſely, as any Preciſian in Cambrige, or Oxford; and hateth / euen Looue itſelfe, in compariſon of Truth, which he is euer to tender with a curious deuotion: but a man may be as blinde in ouerſeeing, as in ſeeing nothing: and he may ſhoote farther from the marke, that ouerſhooteth, then he that ſhooteth ſhort, or wide: as alwayes ſome moteſpying heades haue ſo ſcrupulouſly ordered the matter, *Vt intelligendo nihil intelligerent.* I would be loth to fall into the handes of any ſuch captious, and mutinous witts: but if it be my fortune, to light vpon hard interteinement, what remedie? I haue had ſome little tampering with a kinde of Extortioners, and barratours in my time: and feare not greatly any bugges, but in charitie, or in dutie. Wrong him not, that would gladly be well-taken, where he meaneth-well; and once for all proteſteth, he looueth humanitie with his hart, and reuerenceth diuinitie with his ſoule: as he would rather declare indeede, then profeſſe in worde. If he erreth, it is for want of knowledge, not for want of Zeale. Howbeit for his fuller contentment, he hath alſo done his endeuour, to know ſomething on both ſides; and laying-aſide Partialitie to the perſons, hath priuately made the moſt equall & ſincere Analyſis of their ſeuerall allegations, and proofes, that his Logique, and

Digitized by Google

diuinitie could ſett-downe. For other Analyſes he ouer-paſſed, as impertinent, or not ſpecially materiall. After ſuch examination of their autorities, and argumentes, not with a rigorous Cenſure of either, but with a fauorable Conſtruction of both: Pardon him, though he preſume to deliuer ſome part of his animaduerſions in ſuch termes, as the inſtant occaſion preſenteth: not for any contentious, or ſiniſter purpoſe (the world is too-full of litigious, and barratous pennes) but for the ſatisfaction of thoſe, that deſire them, & the aduertiſement of thoſe, that regard them. Who / according to any indifferent, or reaſonable Analyſis, ſhall finde the ſharpeſt Inuentions, & weightieſt Iudgementes of their leaders, nothing ſo autenticall, or current, as was preiudicatly expected. It is no peece of my intention, to inſtruct, where I may learne: or to controwle any ſuperiour of qualitie, that in conſcience may affect, or in Pollicie ſeeme to countenance that ſide. With Martin, and his applauders; Browne, and his adherents; Barrow, and his complices; Kett, and his ſectaries; or whatſoeuer Commotioners of like diſpoſition, (for neuer ſuch a fluſh of ſciſmatique heads, or heretique witts), that like the notorious H. N. or the preſumptuous Dauid Gorge, or that execrable Seruetus, or other turbulent rebells in Religion, would be Turkeſing, and innouating they wott

Digitized by Google

not what; I hope it may become me, to be allmoſt as bold; as they haue bene with Iudges, Biſhops, Archbiſhops, Princes, and with whom not? howſoeuer learned, wiſe, vertuous, reuerend, honorable, or ſouerain. Or if my coole dealing with them, be inſupportable: I beleeue their hoat practiſing with Lordes, and Princes, was not greatly tolerable. Be, as it may: that is done on both ſides, cannot be vndone: and if they weene, they may offende outragiouſly without iniurie; other are ſuer, they may defend moderately with iuſtice. When that ſeuen-fold Sheild faileth, my plea is at an ende; albeit my making, or marring were the Client. Whiles the ſeuen-fold Sheild holdeth-out, he can doe little, that cannot hold it vpp. A ſtrong Apologie, enhableth a weake hand; and a good cauſe is the beſt Aduocate. Some ſleepe not to all: and I watch not to euery-one. If I be vnderſtood with effect, where I wiſh at-leaſt a demurrer with ſtayed aduiſement, & conſultation; I haue my deſier, & wil not tediouſly importune other. I doubt not of many / cõtrary inſtigatiõs, & ſome bold examples of turbulẽt ſpirits: but heat is not the meeteſt Iudge on the bench, or the ſoundeſt Diuine in diſputation: & in matters of gouernment, but eſpecially in motions of altercatiõ, that runne their heads againſt a ſtrong wall; Take

Digitized by Google

heede is a fayre thing. Were there no other Conſiderations; the Place, and the Time, are two weightie, and mightie Circumſtances. It is a very-nimble feather, that will needes out runne the wing of the Time; and leaue the ſayles of regiment behinde. Men are men, and euer had, and euer will haue their imperfections: Paradiſe taſted of imperfections: the golden age, whenſoeuer it was moſt golden, had ſome droſſe of imperfectiõs: the Patriarkes fealt ſome fits of imperfections: Moſes tabernacle was made acquainted with imperfectiõs; Salomõs Temple could not cleere itſelfe frõ imperfections: the Primitiue Church wanted not imperfections: Conſtantines deuotion founde imperfections: what Reformatiõ could euer ſay? I haue no imperfectiõs: or will they, that dubb themſelues the little flocke, and the onely remnant of Iſrael; ſay? we haue no imperfectios. Had they none, as none haue more, then ſome of thoſe Luciferian ſpirits; it is an vnkinde Birde, that defileth his kinde neaſt; and a prowd huſband-man, that can abide no tares amõgſt wheate, or vpbraideth the Corne with the Cockle. There is a God aboue, that heareth prayers: a Prince beneath, that tendereth ſupplications: Lordes on both ſides, that Patroniſe good cauſes: learned men, that deſire Conference: time, to conſider vpon eſſentiall pointes: Knowledge,

Digitized by Google

that loueth zeale, as zeale muſt reuerence knowledge: Trueth, that diſplayeth, & inueſteth itſelfe: Conſcience, that is a thouſand witneſſes, euen againſt it ſelfe. When the queſtion is *de Re*; to diſpute *de Homine* is ſophiſticall: / or when the matter dependeth in controuerſie, to cauill at the forme is captious: the abuſe of the one, were it proued, aboliſheth not the vſe of the other: what ſhould impertinent ſecrecies be reuealed; or needles quarrels picked; or euery propoſition wrinched to the harſheſt ſenſe? What ſhould honeſt mindes, and excellent wittes, be taunted, and bourded, without rime, or reaſon? What ſhould inſolent, and monſtrous Phantaſticality extoll, and glorify itſelfe aboue the cloudes, without cauſe, or effect? When, where, and how ſhould Martin Iunior be purified; Martin Senior ſaintified; Browne Euangeliſtified; Barrow Apoſtolified; Kett Angelified; or the Patriarke of the loouely Familiſtes, H. N. deified, more then all the world beſide? Were it poſſible, that this age ſhould affoord a diuine and miraculous Elias: yet, when Elias himſelfe deemed himſelfe moſt deſolate, and complained hee was left all-alone; there remained thouſandes liuing, that neuer bowed their knees vnto Baal. But Faction, is as ſure a Keeper of Counſell, as a ſiue: Spite, as cloſe a Secretary, as a ſkummer: Innouation, at the leaſt a bright

Digitized by Google

Angell from heauen: & the foreſaid abſtractes of pure diuinity, will needes know, why Iunius Brutus, or Euſebius Philadelphus ſhould rather be Paſquils incarnate, then they. If there be one Abraham in Vr; one Lot in Sodome; one Daniell in Babilon; one Ionas in Niniue; one Iob in Huz; or if there bee one Dauid in the Court of Saule; one Obadia in the Court of Achab; one Ieremy in the Court of Zedechias; one Zorobabel in the Court of Nabuchodonoſor; one Nehemias in the Court of Artaxerxes; or any ſingular bleſſed One in any good, or bad Court, Citty, State, Kingdome, or Nation; it muſt be one of them: all other of whatſoeuer dignity, or deſert, what but reprobates, apoſtataes, monſters, tyrants, / phariſes, hypocrites, falſe prophets, belly-gods, worldlinges, rauenous woolues, crafty foxes, dogs to their vomite, a generation of vipers, limmes of Sathan, Diuels incarnate, or ſuch like. For Eraſmus poore *Copia Verborum*, and Omphalius ſory furniture of inuectiue and declamatory phraſes muſt come-ſhorte in this compariſon of the rayling faculty. I know no remedy, but the prayer of Charitie, and the order of Autority: whome it concerneth to deale with libels, as with thornes; with phanſies, as with weedes; and with hereſies, or ſciſmes, as with Hydras heads. It hath bene alwayes one of my obſeruations, but eſpecially

Digitized by Google

of later yeares, ſince theſe Numantine ſkirmiſhes: The better ſchollar indeede, the colder ſciſmatique; & the hotter ſciſmatique, the worſe ſchollar. What an hideous and incredible opinion did Dauid Gorge conceiue of himſelf? H. N. was not affraide to inſult ouer al the Fathers, Doctors, ſchoolemẽ, & new-writers, euer ſince the Euãgeliſts, & Apoſtles: Browne challẽged all the Doctours, & other notableſt graduats of Cambridge, and Oxford: Kett, though ſomething in Aſtrology, and Phyſicke, yet a rawe Deuine, how obſtinate, and vntractable in his fantaſticke aſſertions? Barrow taketh vpon him, not onely aboue Luther, Zuinglius, Oecolampadius, Brentius, and all the vehementeſt Germane Proteſtants; but alſo aboue Caluin, Viret, Beza, Marlorat, Knox, Meluin, Cartwright, Trauerſe, Fenner, Penry, and all our importunateſt ſollicitours of reformation; howſoeuer qualified with giftes, or reputed amongſt their fauorits. Illuminate Vnderſtanding, is the rare byrd of the Church; and graund intendimentes come by a certaine extraordinarie, and ſupernaturall reuelation. One Vnlearned Singulariſt hath more in him, then ten learned Preciſians: giue me the braue fellow, that can carrie / a Dragons tayle after him. Tuſh, Vniuerſitie-learning is a Dunſe: and Schoole-diuinitie a Sorboniſt. It is not Art, or Modeſty, that maketh a Rabi

Digitized by Google

Alphes, or a ringleader of multitudes. Dauid Gorge the Archprophet of the world: H. N. the Archeuangelist of Christ: and Barrow the Archapostle of the Church. Superhappy Creatures, that haue illuminate vnderstanding, and graund intendiments at the best hand. Miraculous Barrow, that so hugely exceedeth his auncients in the pure arte of Reformation. But vndoubtedly his Kingdome cannot flourish long: as he hath blessed his Seniors, so he must be annointed of his Iuniors: me thinkes I see an other, and an other headd, suddainely starting-vpp vpon Hydras shouldiers: farewell H. N. and welcome Barrow: adieu Barrow, and All-haile thou Angelicall spirite of the Gospell, whose face I see in a Christall, more pure, then Purity it selfe: the depression of one, the exaltation of another: the corruption of one, the generation of an other: no seede so fertile, or rancke, as the seede of scisme, and the sperme of heresy. Christ aide his assaulted fort; and blisse the seede of Abraham: and in honor of excellent Arts, and worthy Professions, be it euer saide; The best-learned, are best-aduised. Euen Cardinall Sadolet, Cardinall Poole, and Omphalius, commended the milde, and discreete disposition of Melanchon, Bucer, and Sturmius, when they first stirred in Germany: the Queene Moother of Fraunce, and the Cardinall of Lorraine prayſed Ramus, albeit

Digitized by Google

hee was knowen to fauourife the Prince of Condy: Iouius prayfed Reuclin, and Camerarius, as Peucer prayfed Iouius, and Bembus: Oforius prayfed Afcham, as Afcham prayfed Watfon: and who prayfed not Sir Iohn Cheeke; how exceedingly did Cardan praife him? Sir Thomas Smith, her / Maiefties Ambaffadour in France, in the raignes of Henry the Second, Francis the Second, and Charles the Ninth; was honored of none more, then of fome French, and Italian Cardinals, and Bifhops: the Kinges fonnes fauored his fonne, afwell after, as before their Coronation. Neander in his late Chronicle, and later Geographie, praifeth here, & there certaine Papiftes: and did not Agrippa, Erafmus, Duarene, and Bodine occafionally prayfe as many Proteftants? It was a fweet, and diuine Vertue, that ftirred-vp looue, & admiration in fuch aduerfaries: & doubtleffe they carried an honeft, & honorable mynde, that forgot themfelues, and their frendes, to doe their enemies reafon, and Vertue right. A vertue, that I often feeke, feldome finde; wifh-for in many, hope-for in fome, looke-for in few; reuerence in a Superiour, honour in an inferiour; admire in a frend, looue in a foe; ioy, to fee, or heare, in one, or other. Peruerfe natures are forward to difguife themfelues, and to condemne not onely Curtefie, or humanitie, but euen humilitie, & charitie it felfe, with a nick-

Digitized by Google

name of Newtralitie, or Ambidexteritie: terme it, what you lift, and mifcall it at your pleafure: certes it is an excellent and fouerain qualitie, that in a firme refolution neuer to abandon Vertue, or to betray the Truth, ftealeth interteinement from difpleafure, fauour from offence, looue from enmitie, grace from indignation; and not like Homers Syren, but like Homers Minerua, traineth Partialitie to a liking of the aduerfe Partie; diffenfion to a commendation of his Contrarie; errour to an embracement of truth; and euen Corruption himfelfe to an aduauncement of valour; of defert, of integretie, of that morall, and intellectuall good, that fo gratiouſly infinuateth, and fo forciblie emproouеth itfelfe. Oh, that learning were euer married to fuch / difcretion; witt to fuch wifedome; Zeale to fuch vertue; contention to fuch moralitie: and oh, that fuch priuate gouernement might appeare in thofe, that pleade moft-importunatly for publique gouernement. Oh, that Plato could teach Xenocrates; Ariftotle, Callifthenes; Theophraftus, Ariftotle; Eunapius, Iamblicus; to facrifice to the fweet Graces of Mercurie. What fhould I vayle, or fhadow a good purpofe? Oh a thoufand times, that Melanct[h]on could traine Iunius Brutus; Sturmius, Philadelphus; Ramus, Beza; Iewell, Cartwright; Deering, Martin; Baro, Barrow; to embrace the heauenly Graces of Chrift, and to

Digitized by Google

kiſſe the hand of that diuine Creature, that paſſeth all Vnderſtanding. What a felicitie were it, to ſee ſuch heades as pregnant, as Hydras heades; or Hydras heades as rare as ſuch heades?

It is not my meaning, to deface, or preiudice any, that Vnfainedly meaneth well: if Percaſe I happen to touch ſome painted walles, and godly hypocrites (Godlineſſe is become a ſtrange Creature, ſhould they be truly godly) let them keepe their owne Counſel, and ceaſe to affect new reputation by old hereſies. The Iewes had their holly-holly-holly *Eſſæans*: their ſeperate, / and preciſe *Phariſes*: their daily regenerate, & Puritane *Hemerobaptiſtes*: their feruent, and illuminate Zelotiſtes: onely in ſhape men, in conuerſation Saincts, in inſinuation Angels, in profeſſion Demi-gods; as deſcended from heauen, to bleſſe the Earth, and to make the Citie a Paradiſe, that waſhed their feete. Ieſus bleſſe good mindes from the blacke enemy, when he attireth himſelfe like an Angell of light. Iudas the Gaulonite, in the reigne of Herode the Great, was an hoat toſt, and a maruelous Zelotiſt; when the Emperour Octauian taxing the world, and aſſeſſing Iudea, like other nations, who but he, / in the abundance of his mightie Zeale, was the man, that ſett it downe for a Canonicall Doctrine: That the people of God, was to acknowledge no other Lord, but God: and that it was a ſlauiſh

Digitized by Google

bondage, to pay any ſuch exaction, or impoſition to Auguſtus: and hauing giuen-out that principle, for an infallible rule, or rather a ſacred law, very vehemently ſollicited and importuned the people (as the manner is) to liue, and dye in the cauſe of their God, and their libertie. But ſweet Chriſt was of a milder & meeker ſpirite; & both payed tribute himſelfe to auoyde offence; and ſet it downe for an eternal Maxime in his Goſpell; Giue vnto Cæſar, that belongeth vnto Cæſar, and vnto God, that belongeth vnto God. Zealous Iudas the Gaulonite, and feruent Simon the Galilean, two ſingular reformers of the Iudaicall Synagoge, pretended fayre for a pure Type, or exquiſite platforme of the ſoundeſt, exacteſt, and preciſeſt Hebraicall Diſcipline: but what prophane Idolatrie ſo plagued that diuine Common-wealth, as that ſame ſcrupulous Zeale? or what made that bleſſed ſtate, vtterly miſerable, but that ſame vnruly, and tumultuous Zeale; that would not be content with reaſon, vntill it was too-late? For a time, they ſuppoſed themſelues, the worthieſt, & rareſt Creatures in Iudea, or rather the onely men of that ſtate; and in a deepe conceit of a neat & vndefiled puritie, diuorced, or ſequeſtred themſelues frõ the corrupt ſocietie of other: but alas, that any purified mindes, ſhould pay ſo dearely, and ſmartly for their fine Phanſies; which coſt

Digitized by Google

them no leſſe, then the moſt lamentable ouerthrow of their whole Common-wealth. You that haue Languages, and Arts, more than diuers others of good qualitie, and can Vſe them with Methode, and a certaine plauſible opinion of great learning, be as excellent, and ſin/gular, as you poſſiblie can for your liues, in a direct courſe: but be not peeuiſh; or odd in a crooked balke, that leadeth out-of the Kinges high-way, and Chriſtes owne path, into a maze of confuſion, and a wilderneſſe of deſolation: the finall ende of theſe endleſſe Contentions, if they be not otherwiſe calmed by priuate diſcretion, or cutt-ſhort by publique order. The firſt example of diuiſion, was perillous: and what rankes, or ſwarmes of inſatiable ſciſme, incontinently followed? It is a mad world, when euery crew of conceited Punyes, puffed-vp with a preſumptuous, or phantaſticall imagination, muſt haue their ſeuerall complot, or faction, as it were a certaine Punicall warre: whoſe victorie wilbe like that of Carthage againſt Roome, if it be not the ſooner quieted. Remember Iudas the Gaulonite; and forgett not yourſelues: inordinate Zeale is a pernitious Reformer: and Deſtruction, a deare purchaſe of Plotts in Moone-ſhine. S. Paule, the heroicall Apoſtle, could not finde a more excellent way, then Charitie, the moſt-ſouerain way of Faith, and Hope: any other

Digitized by Google

deſeigne of puritie, or ſingularitie, buildeth not vp, but pulleth-downe; and of more then a Million in hope, prooueth leſſe then a cipher in effect. What the ſaluation of Dauid Gorge? a nullitie; what the deification of H. N.? a nullitie: what the glorification of Kett? a nullitie: what the ſanctification of Browne? a nullitie: what the cõmunitie of Barrow? a nullitie: what the plauſibilitie of Martin? a nullitie: what a thouſand ſuch popular motiues, allectiues, incenſiues, aggrauations of the leaſt corruptiõ, amplificatiõs of the higheſt felicitie, new landes of promiſe, ouerflowing with milke, and honny, fooles Paradiſes, glorious innouations; but preſent ſhame, wretched confuſion, vtter ruine, euerlaſting infamie, horrible damnation, & a moſt hideous / nullity? Euẽ the great hurly-burly of the Church, the imagined-heauenly Diſcipline; and the very topſy-turuy of the ſtate, the pretended-diuine Reformation; of two mightie Giants, what can they poſſiblie emprooue themſelues, but ſilly Pigmyes, and a moſt pittifull nullitie? Sweet Charitie, enſweeten theſe bitter garboiles: and ſeing they ſo inſtantly, and importunatly affect a perfect Platforme, giue them a moſt-curious, and exquiſite Table of pure Reformation, euen the true Picture of Thiſelf. Surer Preuention of miſchiefe, and ruine, I know, none.

Digitized by Google

I had here bidden Martin in the Vintry farwell, and taken my leaue of this tedious Diſcourſe ; (for no man taketh leſſe delight in Inuectiues) ; were I not newly certified of certaine freſh, & frantique practiſes for the erection of the Synedrion in all haſt : whoſe complotters are weary of melancholy Proiects, and begin to reſolue on a cholerique courſe. Hoat arguments are fiercely threatened, in caſe the Diſcipline be not the ſooner enterteined: but methinks that warme courſe ſhould ſcarſely be the ſtile of pure Mortification : and haply ſofter fier would make ſweeter mault. A little aduiſement, doth not much amiſſe in capitall, or daungerous attemptes. It were well, the blowing bellowes might be entreated to keepe their winde for a fitter opportunitie : or if fier boilyng in the ſtomacke, muſt needes breake-out at the mouth ; the beſt comfort is, the Country affordeth ſufficient prouiſiõ of water, to encounter, the terribleſt Vulcaniſt, that brandiſheth a burning ſword, or a fierie toung. Howbeit ſome lookers-on, that feare not greatly the flame, cannot but maruell at the ſmoake ; and had rather ſee them, breathing-out the fume of diuine Tobacco, thẽ of furious rage. I haue read of Politique Iewes, that for their commoditie haue become Chriſtiãs : / whom in Spaine, & Italy they terme *Retaliados* : but that Politique Chriſtiãs for any benefit, promotiõ, or

Digitized by Google

other regard whatſoeuer, ſhould practiſe to become Iews, in doctrine, or in diſcipline, in earneſt, or in deuiſe, in whole, or in part, it were ſtrange, & almoſt incredible: if the world were not growen a mõſtrous *Retaliado* for his aduantage; & the voyce of Iacob prooued a more gaynfull Stratageme for the hands of Eſau, then euer the hands of Eſau were for the voyce of Iacob. I charge not any, that are cleere; (would there were no more Iewiſh Phariſes, then Hebrue Worthies); but let not them accuſe me for ſpeaking, that condemne themſelues for doing; or ſhew themſelues Saincts in the Premiſſes, that will ſcantly prooue honeſt men in the Concluſion. All are not ledd with the ſame reſpectes, that hang on the ſame ſtring: ſome are carried with one conſideration, ſome with an other: ſome tender diuinity, as their ſoule: ſome looue Religion, as their boddy; ſome fauour the Goſpell, as their fortune: I doubt not, but ſome deſier Diſcipline for Conſcience; and do none coouet Reformation for gayne; or were it impoſſible, to point-out a *Retaliado* Conuert, in the whotteſt throng of thoſe freſh Proſelites. If there be no *Retaliados* in Chriſtendome, I am glad I haue ſayd nothing: if there be, they may ſo long mocke other in wordes, that at-laſt they will moſt deceiue themſelues in deedes. I am beholding to the old Iurie; but

Digitized by Google

haue no great phanſie to a new, either in London, or elſewhere; when amongſt diuers other hiſtories of Iewiſh enormities, I remember how an auncient Archbiſhop of Canterbury, one Iohn Peckam, was fayne to take order with the Biſhop of London then being, for the diſſolutiõ, and deſtruction of all the Synagoges in his Dioces. The leſſe neede of any ſuch order at this inſtant, all the better. I / will not diſpute, whether a Synedrion preſuppoſe a Synagoge; or whether it be not as inſupportable a yoke for any King, or mightie ſtate, as it was for King Herode, or the Romanes, that found it intolerable: (me thinkes the wiſeſt Sanedriſt of a thouſand, ſhould hardly perſuad me, that he is a frend of Princes, or no enemie of Monarchies): but I know ſomuch by ſome, none of the meaneſt Schollers, or obſcureſt men in Europe, touching their opinion of the old, and new Teſtament, of the Thalmud, of the Alcoran, of the Hebrue, Chriſtian, and Turkiſh Hiſtories; that I deeme anything ſuſpicious, and perillous, that anyway inclineth to Iudaiſme; as fell an aduerſarie to Chriſtianitie, as the Wolfe to the Lambe, or the Goſhawk to the Dooue. Graunt them an inche; they will ſoone take an ell with the aduantage: and were any part of their Diſcipline one foote, could the boddy of their Doctrine want an head? or might not the Pariſhe prooue a diſorderly Con-

Digitized by Google

gregation, as bad as a Synagoge, where the Iudiciall bench were a Synedrion? The Iewes are a ſuttle, and miſcheeuous people: and haue cunningly inuegled ſome ſtudents of the holly toung, with their miraculous Cabala from Moſes, their omniſcious Coſmologie from Salomon, their Caldæan Sapience from Daniell, and other profound Secrets of great pretence: but their liberall gifts bite like their Vſurie; and they are finally founde to interteine them beſt, that ſhutt them quite out-of doores, with their Sanedrim, and all. They can tell a precious tale of their diuine Senate; and of their Venerable Meokekim, reuerenced like liuing Lawes: but were all iudgements actually drawen to the diuine Senate, and all lawes ſolemnely to be fetched from the Venerable Meokekim, as from ſpeaking Oracles; might not theſe, and their other Metaphyſicall myſteries, be / enregiſtered in the ſame Thalmud; or might it not prooue a pinching Reformation for Chriſtendome? I haue taſted of their Verball miracles; and cannot greatly commend their perſonall vertues: but their reall Vſurie is knowen through-out the Chriſtian world, to be an vnmercifull Tyrant, & I feare me, their Conſiſtoriall Iuriſdictiõ would growe a Cruell griper; eſpecially being ſo Vniuerſally extended in euery Pariſh, as is intended by the promoters thereof, and powerably armed with that ſupreme,

Digitized by Google

& Vncontrowlable authoritie, which they affect in cauſes Eccleſiaſticall. A braue ſpirituall motion, and worthie not onely of theſe pidling ſturres, but euen of a Troian warre. Yet their Precedent, the Moſaicall Synedrion, was a Ciuil Court, (as is afore mentioned, & would be reconſidered) *cum mero imperio*: and when it became mixt, it was not meerly Eccleſiaſticall; & when it became meerly Eccleſiaſticall, of a Pōtifical Conſiſtory, it ſoone prooued a Tyrannicall Court; and by your good leaue, was as nimble to encroach vpon Ciuill cauſes, being an Eccleſiaſticall Court, as euer it was to intermeddle with Eccleſiaſticall cauſes, being a Ciuill Court. The fineſt Methodiſts, according to Ariſtotles golden rule of artificiall Boundes, condemne Geometricall preceptes in Arithmetique, or Arithmeticall preceptes in Geometrie, as irregular, and abuſiue: but neuer Artiſt ſo licentiouſly heterogeniſed, or ſo extrauagantly exceeded his preſcribed limits, as Ambition, or Coouetice. Euery Miller is ready to conuey the water to his owne mill: and neither the high Prieſtes of Ieruſalem, nor the Popes of Roome, nor the Patriarckes of Conſtantinople, nor the Paſtors of Geneua, were euer haſtie to binde their owne handes. They that reſearch Antiquities, and inquier into the priuities of Practiſes, ſhall finde an Act of *Præmunire* / is a neceſſarie Bridle in ſome

Digitized by Google

caſes. The firſt Biſhops of Roome, were vndoubtedly vertuous men, and godly Paſtors: from Biſhops they grew to be Popes: what more reuerend, then ſome of thoſe Biſhops; or what more Tyrannicall, then ſome of thoſe Popes? Aaron, and the high-Prieſtes of Ieruſalem, and of other ceremoniall nations, were their glorious Mirrours; and they deemed nothing too-magnificall, or pompous, to breede an Vniuerſall reuerence of their ſacred autoritie, and Hierarchie. We are ſo farre alienated from imitating, or allowing them, that we cannot abide our owne Biſhops; yet withall would haue euery Miniſter a Biſhop, and would alſo be fetching a new patterne from old Ieruſalem, the moother-ſea of the high-Prieſthood. So the world (as the manner is) will needes runne-about in a Circle: pull-downe Biſhops; ſet vp the Miniſter; make him Biſhop of his Pariſh, and head of the Conſiſtorie, (call him, how you liſt, that muſt be his place): what will become of him within a fewe generations, but a high Prieſt in a low Ieruſalem, or a great Pope in a ſmall Roome? And then, where is the difference betweene him, and a Biſhop, or rather betweene him, and a Pope? not ſo much in the qualitie of his Iuriſdiction, when in effect he may be his owne Iudge, as in the quantitie of his Dioces, or temporalties. Or in caſe he be Politique; as ſome Popes haue bene

Digitized by Google

glad for their aduantage, to tyranniſe Popularly, ſo he may chaunce be content for his aduauncement, to populariſe, tyrannically: and ſhall not be the firſt of the Clergie, that hath cunningly done it with a comely grace. Something there muſt be of a Monarchie in free ſtates: and ſomething there will be of free ſtates, in a Monarchie. The discreeter, and Vprighter the Curate is, the more circumſpectly he will walke, and degenerate the leſſe. / Yet what generation without degeneration: or what reuolution without irregularitie? One inconuenience begetteth an other: enormities grow like euill weedes: take heede of a miſchiefe: and where then will be the corruptions? Or how ſhall defection, (acknowledging no primacie, or ſuperioritie in any perſon, or Court) retire to his firſt inſtitution: if percaſe there ſhould growe a Conſpiracie in fellowſhip; one Conſiſtorie iuſtifie another for aduantage; and their whole Synods fall-out in conſequence, to be like their Parts? Men may erre: and frailtie will ſlipp. What ſhould I alledge Hiſtoryes, or autorities? It is no newes for infirmitie to fall, when it ſhould ſtand; or for appetite to rebell, when it ſhould obey. Euery ſonne of Adam, a reed ſhaken with the wind of paſſion, a weake Veſſell, a Schollar of imperfection, a Maſter of ignorance, a Doctour of errour, a Paſtour of concupiſcence, a Superintendent

Digitized by Google

of auarice, a Lord of ambition, a Prince of ſinne, a ſlaue of mortalitie. Fleſh is fleſh; and Blud a Wanton, a chaungeling, a compound of contrary elementes, a reuoulting and retrog[r]ade Planet, a Sophiſter, an hypocrite, an impoſtour, an Apoſtata, an heretique; as conuertible as Mercury, as variable as the weather-cock, as lunatique as the Moone; a generation of corruption, a Whore of Babylon, a limme of the world, and an impe of the Diuell. It is their owne argument in other mens caſe: and why ſhould it not be other mens argument in their caſe, Vnleſſe they can ſhew a perſonall Priuiledge *ad imprimendum ſolum*? They may ſpeake, as they liſt: termes of ſanctification, and mortificatiõ, are free for them, that will vſe them: but the Common opinion is, euen of the forwardeſt ſkirmiſhers at this day, they doe like other men; and liue like the children of the world, and the brethren of themſelues. Some of them haue / their neighbours good leaue, to be their owne Proctors, or Aduocats, if they pleaſe. Yet how probable is it, they are now at their very beſt, and euen in the neateſt and pureſt plight of their incorruption, whiles their mindes are abſtracted from worldly thoughts, to a high meditation of their ſuppoſed-heauenly Reformation: and whiles it neceſſarily behooueth them, to ſtand charily and nicely vpon the credit of their in-

Digitized by Google

tegritie, ſinceritie, preciſeneſſe, godlineſſe, Zeale, and other vertues? When ſuch reſpects are ouer, and their purpoſe compaſſed according to their harts deſier; who can tell how they, or their ſucceſſours may vſe the Keyes; or how they will beſturr them with the Sworde? If Fleſh prooue not a Pope Ioane; and Bloud a Pope Hildebrand, good enough. Accidents, that haue happened, may happen agayne; and all thinges vnder the Sunne, are ſubiect to caſualtie, mutabilitie, and corruption. At all aduentures, it is a braue Poſition, to maintaine a Souerain, and ſupreme autoritie in euery Conſiſtorie; and to exempt the Miniſter from ſuperiour Cenſure; like the high Prieſt, or greateſt Pontiffe, whom Dionyſius Halycarnaſſeus calleth *ἀνυμέννον*. He had neede to be a wiſe, and Conſcionable man, that ſhould be a Parlamēt, or a Chauncerie vnto himſelfe: and what a furniture of diuine perfections were requiſite in the Church, where ſo many Miniſters, ſo many ſpirituall high Iuſtices of Oier, and Terminer: and euery one a ſupreme Tribunall, a Synode, a Generall Councell, a Canon Law, a heauenly Law, and Goſpel vnto himſelfe? If no Serpent can come within his Paradiſe, ſafe enough. Or were it poſſible, that the Paſtor, (although a man, yet a diuine man) ſhould as it were by inheritance, or ſucceſſion, continue a Sainct

Digitized by Google

from generation to generation: is it alſo neceſſary, that the whole company of the redoubted / Seniors, ſhould wage euerlaſting warre with the fleſh, the world, and the Diuell; and eternally remaine an incorruptible Areopage, without wound, or ſcarre? Neuer ſuch a Colledge, or fraternitie vpon Earth, if that be their inuiolable order. But God helpe Conceit, that buildeth Churches in the Ayer, and platformeth Diſciplines without ſtayne, or ſpott.

They complaine of corruptions; and worthily, where Corruptions encroche, (I am no Patron of corruptions): but what a ſurging ſea of corruptiõ would ouerflow within few yeares, in caſe the ſword of ſo great and ample autoritie, as that at Ieruſalem moſt capitall, or this at Geneua moſt redoubted, were putt into the hand of ſo little capacitie in gouernement, ſo little diſcretion in Diſcipline, ſo little iudgement in cauſes, ſo little moderation in liuing, ſo little conſtancie in ſaying, or dooing, ſo little grauitie in behauiour, or ſo little whatſoeuer ſhould procure reuerence in a Magiſtrate, or eſtabliſh good order in a Cõmonwealth. Trauaile thorough ten thouſand Pariſhes in England; and when you haue taken a fauourable vew of their ſubſtantialleſt, and ſufficienteſt Aldermen, tell me in good ſooth, what a comely ſhowe they would make in a Conſiſtorie; or with how ſolemne a preſence they would furniſh a

Digitized by Google

Councell Table. I beleeue, *Grimaldus* did little thinke of any ſuch Senatours, whē he writt *de Optimo Senatore*: or did Doctour *Bartholmew Philip*, in his Perfect Counſellour, euer dreame of any ſuch Coūſellours? Petty Principalities, petty Tyrants; & ſuch Senats, ſuch Senatours. Witt might deuiſe a pleaſurable Dialogue betwixt the Leather Pilch, and the Veluet Coate: and helpe to perſuade the better, to deale neighbourly with the other; the other to cōtēt himſelfe with his owne calling. I deny not, but the ſhort apron may / be as honeſt a man, or as good a Chriſtian, as the long gowne: but methinkes he ſhould ſcantly be ſo good a Iudge, or Aſſiſtant in doubtfull cauſes: and I ſuppoſe, *Ne ſutor vltrà crepidam* is as fitt a Prouerbe now, as euer it was, ſince that excellent Painter rebuked that ſawcie Cobler. Euery ſubiect is not borne to be a Magiſtrate, or Officer: and who knoweth not, whoſe creature Superiour Power is? They are very-wiſe, that are wiſer then he, by whoſe diuine permiſſion, euery one is that he is. The *Laconicall Ephory* hath lately borne a great ſwing, in ſome reſolute Diſcourſes of Princes, and Magiſtrates; that thought they ſaued the world from the abhomination of deſolatiō, when they found-out a bridle, or yoke for Princes: but old Ariſtotle was a deepe Politician *in diebus illis*: and his Reaſons

Digitized by Google

againſt that Ephorie (for Ariſtotle confuted the Ephorie with ſounder arguments, then euer it was confirmed to this day) would not yet perhaps be altogither contemned: That ſo great iudiciall cauſes were committed to men, indued with ſo little, or no Vertue: That the poore Plebians for very penurie were eaſely bribed, and corrupted: That there enſued an alteration of the ſtate, the good Kinges being fayne to currie fauour with their great Maſters, and to become Popular. Whither this would be the end, and may be the marke of thoſe, or our Populars, I offer it to their conſideration, that are moſt intereſſed in ſuch motions of Ephoryes, and Senioryes. The world is beholding to braue and heroicall myndes, that like Hercules, would practiſe meanes to pull-downe Tyranny, ſmal, or great: and reforme whole Empires, and Churches, like the three victorious Emperours, ſurnamed *Magni*, Conſtantine, Theodoſius, and Charles. Thankes, were an vnſufficient recompenſe for ſo noble intentions. It muſt / be a guerdon of value, that ſhould counteruaile their deſert, that pretend ſo fatherly, and Patronly a care of reedifying Commonwealthes, and Churches. Some voluntarie Counſellours doe well in a State: and men of extraordinary vocation, ſingularly qualified for the purpoſe, are worth their double weight in gold. When other

Digitized by Google

ſleepe, they watch: when other play, they worke: when other feaſt, they faſt: when other laugh, they ſigh: whiles other are content to be lulled in ſecuritie, and nuſled in abuſe, they occupie themſelues in deuiſing pregnant bondes of aſſurance, and exquiſite models of Reformation. Which muſt preſently be aduaunced without farther conſultatiõ: or they haue courage, and will vſe it in mainetenaunce of ſo diuine abſtractes. Melancholie is peremptorie in reſolution: and Choler an ægar Executioner. Were it not for thoſe two inuincible arguments, there might ſtill be order taken with other reaſons, and autorities whatſoeuer. They do well to preſuppoſe the beſt of their owne deſeignes, and to giue out Cardes of Fortunate Ilandes, artificially drawen: but as I neuer read, or heard of any people, that committed ſwordes into ſuch hands, but bought their experience with loſſe, and had a hard penyworth of their ſoft cuſhion: ſo in my ſimple conſideration, I cannot conceiue, how Ignoraunce ſhould become a meeter Officer, then Knowledge; Affection a more incorrupt Magiſtrate, then Reaſon; headlong Raſhneſſe, or wilfull Stubberneſſe, a more vpright Iudge, then mature Deliberation; baſe Occupations enact, and eſtabliſh better orders, then liberall Sciences, or honourable Profeſſions; (any traffique, howſoeuer current, or aduantageous, hath bene

Digitized by Google

iudged vndecent for a Senatour); tagg, & ragg adminiſter all things abſolutely-well, with due prouiſion againſt whatſoeuer poſſible / inconueniences, where ſo many faults are found with perſons of better qualitie; that incomparablie haue more ſkil in the adminiſtration of publique affaires; more knowledge, and experience in cauſes; more reſpect in proceeding; more regard of their credit; more ſenſe of daungerous enormities, or contagious abuſes; more care of the flooriſhing and durable eſtate of the Prince, the Commonwealth, and the Church. Na, I can ſee no reaſon, according to the beſt groundes of Pollicie, that euer I read, but for euery Ciuill tyranny or Pettie miſdemeanour that can poſſiblie happen now, the gouernemẽt ſtanding as it doth; there muſt needes Vpſtart a hundred, and a hundred barbarous tyrannies, and huge outrages, were the new platformes, Actes of Parlament; and the Complotters, ſuch high Commiſſioners, as are deſcribed in their owne proiects, the flooriſhes of Vnexperienced wittes. When they haue nothing elſe to alledge, that ſhould make them ſuperiour, or equall to the preſent Officers; Conſcience muſt be their Text, their Gloſſe, their Sanctuarie, their Tenure, and their ſtrong hold. Indeede Conſcience, grounded vpon Science, is a double Ancher; that neither deceiueth, nor is deceiued: and no better rule, then a regular, or

Digitized by Google

publique Conſcience; in diuinitie ruled by Diuinitie, in law, by Law, in art by Art, in reaſon by Reaſon, in experience by Experience. Other irregular, or priuate Conſcience, in Publique functions, will fall-out to be but a lawleſſe Church; a ſhip-mans hoſe; a iugglers ſticke; a phantaſticall freehold, and a conceited Tenure *in Capite*: as interchaungeable as the Moone, and as fallible as the winde. How barratous, and mutinous at euery puffe of Suggeſtion, lett the world iudge. I would there lacked a preſent Example, as hoat, as freſh: but hoat looue, ſoone cold, and the fittes of / youth like the ſhowers of Aprill. There goeth a prettie Fable of the Moone, that on a time ſhe earneſtly beſought her moother, to prouide her a comely garment, fitt and handſome for her boddy: How can that be, ſweet daughter, (quoth the moother) ſith your boddy neuer keepeth at one certaine ſtate, but changeth euery day in the moneth? That priuate Conſcience, the ſweet daughter of Phanſie, be the Morall: and the aſſurance of the Common People, where there wanteth a curbe, the application. What Chameleon ſo chaungeth his colour, as Affection? or what Polypus ſo variable, as *Populus, chorus, fluuius*? Doctour Kelke, when he was Vicechauncelour in Cambridge, would often tell the Aduocats, and Proctors in the Conſiſtorie there, that he had a knacke of Conſcience, for

Digitized by Google

their knacke of Law. Truly the man, as he was knowen to be learned, and religious, ſo ſeemed to carrie a right-honeſt and harmeleſſe minde, and would many times be pleaſantly diſpoſed after his blunt manner: but in very deede his Conſcience (be it ſpoken without appeachmẽt of his good memorie) other-whiles prooued a knacke, and admitted more inconueniences (ſome would haue ſayd, committed more abſurdities) then became the grauitie, and reputation of that iudicious Conſiſtorie. Yet were this new-plotted Conſiſtorie erected, according to the map of their owne imagination, euen vpon the topp of the preſumed mount Sion: by the fauour of that goodly proſpect I dare vndertake, amongſt ſo many thouſand Miniſters, with Epiſcopall, or more then Epiſcopall autoritie, there muſt be but a fewe hundred Iudges, like Doctour Kelke; and a very great dearth of ſuch Aſſiſtants, or Seniours, as that flooriſhing Vniuerſitie affourdeth. Alas, many thouſands of them, Vnworthy to carrie the Beadles ſtaffe before the one, / or their bookes after the other: how meete for ſupreme, or free Iuriſdiction, I report me vnto you. It is notably ſayd of Ariſtotle in his Politiques: He that would haue the Lawe to rule, would haue a God to rule: but he that committeth the rule to a man, committeth the rule to a beaſt. The Lawe, is a mynde without appetite;

Digitized by Google

a ſoule without a boddy; a Iudge without fleſhe and bloud; a ballance without Partialitie; a meane without extreames. Where Conſcience is ſuch a Law, I am for Conſcience, let vs profeſſe no other law; let vs build vs Conſiſtories, and tabernacles vpon that hill of Equitie: let vs dwell in thoſe Eliſian fieldes of Integritie: let vs honour that incorruptible ſcepter of Sinceritie: let vs ſet the Imperiall crowne vpon the head of that Pollicie; and let that Diſcipline weare the Pōtificall miter. The world wrongeth itſelfe infinitly, if it runneth not to the gaze of that bewtifull *Bel-uedere*; or refuſeth any order frō that ſacred Oracle. Otherwiſe, if men be men, & that Cōſiſtory, no quire of Angels, or Tribunall of Saincts, but a meeting of neighbours, ſome of them rude, and groſe enough, after the homelyeſt guiſe, (for without miraculous illumination, it muſt neceſſarily be ſo in moſt Pariſhes): now I beſeech you, hath not Conſideration ſome reaſon, to feare the Delphicall Sword? And the conuented partie, that was nothing affrayde of the Deane, or the Canons; they, quoth he, are good Gentlemen, and my fauourable frendes, but the Chapter is the Diuell; would peraduenture go nigh-hand to ſay aſmuch for the new Conſiſtorie, as for the old Chapter. Our Miniſter is a Zealous Preacher: and ſuch, and ſuch my honeſt neighbours: but God bleſſe

Digitized by Google

me from the curſt Conſiſtorie. They that ſkill of Popular humours, and know the courſe of mechanicall dealinges, or artiſan gouernements, or / what you pleaſe; can hardlie hope for any ſuch Paradiſe, or All-hallowes in hoony-lane, as is plauſiblie pourtrayed in ſome late drawghts of Reformatiō; ſweeter in diſcourſe, then in practiſe. I will not prophecie of Contingēts in ſpeculation: but were their Complot a matter *in eſſe*, it is poſſible that euen the Platformers themſelues, ſhould haue no ſuch exceeding cauſe, to ioye in their redoubted Seniours. Some Poteſtats are queint men, and will by fittes beare a braine, maugre the beſt reaſon or Pureſt Conſcience in a Conſiſtorie. And God knoweth, how the People would digeſt it, (eſpecially after ſome little triall of their inexorable rigour, and other ſurly dealing) that their neighbour Whatchicalt, ſometime no wiſer then his fellowes, and ſuch, and ſuch a Free-holder of this, and that homely occupation, (ſomewhat baſe for a Senatour) ſhould ſo iollily perke on the bench, amongſt the Fathers Conſcript, when ſome, that haue a ſtate of inheritance, or maintaine themſelues vpon ciuiler trades, muſt humbly wait at the barre, and yeeld themſelues obedient to the ſterne commandements of thoſe ſage benchers. Iwis, the penny is a ſtrong argument with ſuch natures: and he that carrieth

Digitized by Google

the heauieſt purſe, how vnmeete ſoeuer he may ſeeme for a Conſiſtorie, thinketh himſelfe mightily wronged, Vnleſſe he be taken for the beſt, or one of the beſt in the Pariſh: and if for his countenaunce, or other charitable reſpect, he will not ſticke ſometime to pleaſure a good fellow, or a poore neighbour, (ſome good fellowes are kill-cowes, and ſome poore neighbours all-hart) he may perhaps get ſom hardy partakers, & bare himſelfe for as mighty a man in the borrowgh, or village, as ſome of the foreſaid redoubted Poteſtats. How that would be allowed in Conſiſtorie, or how a thouſand ſuites, quarrels, vprores, & hurliburlyes might be pacified, / yet vn-prouided-for, or vnthought-vpon by the compendious Summiſts; it would be conſidered in time, whiles there is leyſure from Practiſe. For after the Conſiſtorie is once vp; in ſuch a ſweating harueſt of moſt-buſie buſineſſe, a ſimple Pragmatique may eaſely Prognoſticate, how ſmall a remnant of leyſure will remaine for conſideration. There was much adooe, & otherwhiles little helpe, firſt at Ieruſalem, with one Synedrion; and then at Geneua with one Seniorie, the two onely exemplary Preſbiteryes: (for other Primitiue Elderſhips will not fit the turne: what a wonderfull ſturre would one, and ſome 52000. Conſiſtories make in England? Were not our Reformation likely to prooue a greater

Digitized by Google

Sweat, or a mightier Drowt, then any in Graftons, Stowes, or Holinſheads Chronicle? Martin, vnder correction of your high Court of Conſcience, giue me leaue to bethinke me attonce, vpon the fier-worke of your Diſcipline, and Phaetons regiment, in the hoat Countryes of the Orient. When his braue deſeigne came to the Execution; *ſolitaque iugum grauitate carebat;* a light beginning, a heauie ending.

Nec ſcit, quâ ſit iter; nec ſi ſciat, imperet illis: and ſo forth: (it is not conceit, or courage, but ſkill, and authoritie, that manageth gouernement with honour): what was the iſſue of that yonkerly & preſumptuous enterpriſe, but a Diluge of fier, as ruthfull, and horrible, as Deucalions Diluge of water.

Magnæ pereunt cum mænibus Vrbes:
Cumq.; ſuis totas populis incendia Gentes
In cinerem vertunt. You can beſt tranſlate it yourſelfe: and I leaue the warm application to the hoat Interpreter: with addition of that ſhort, but weightie, and moſt remarkable aduertiſement; *Poenam / Phaeton, pro munere poſcis.* Phaeton thou deſireſt thy ruine for thy aduauncement: and Martin, thou affecteſt, thou wotteſt not what: a Diſcipline? a confuſion? a Reformation? a deformation: a Salue? a plague: a Bliſſe? a curſe: a Commonwealth? a Common-

Digitized by Google

wo: a Happy, and Heauenly Church? a wretched, and hellish Synagogue. Amount in imagination as high, as the hawtiest conceit can aspire; and plat-forme the most-exquisite deseignes of pure Perfection, that the nicest curiositie can deuise: were not the wisest on your side, most simplie-simple in weying the Consequents of such antecedents, they would neuer so inconsideratly labour their owne shame, the miserie of their brethren, the desolatiō of the Ministery, & the destructiō of the Church. Good Martin, be good to the Church, to the Ministery, to the state, to thy country, to thy patrons, to thy frends, to thy brethren, to thiselfe: and as thou loouest thiselfe, take heede of old Puritanisme, new Anabaptisme, & finall Barbarisme. Thou art young in yeares, I suppose: but younger in enterprise, I am assured. Thy age in some sort pleadeth thy pardon: and couldest thou with any reasonable temperance aduise thiselfe in time, as it is high time to assuage thy stomachous and ouerlashing outrage; there be fewe wise men of qualite, but would pittie thy rash proceeding, and impute thy wanton scurrilous Veine to want of Experience, and Iudgement, which is seldome ripe in the Spring. I will not stand to examine the Spirite, that speaketh, or endighteth in such a phrase: but if that were the tenour of a godly, or zealous stile, methinkes some

Digitized by Google

other Sainct, or godly man, ſhould ſome way haue vſed the like elocution before: vnleſſe you meant to be as ſingular in your forme of writing, as in your manner of cenſuring; & to publiſh as graue an Innouation in wordes, as / in other matters. Some ſpirituall motion it was, that cauſed you ſo ſenſiblie to applie your rufling ſpeach, and whole method, to the feeding and tickling of that humour, that is none of the greateſt ſtudentes of Diuinitie, vnleſſe it be your Diuinitie; nor any of the likelyeſt creatures to aduance Reformation, vnleſſe it be your Reformation. But whatſoeuer your motion were, or howſoeuer you perſuaded yourſelfe, that a plauſible and roiſterly courſe would winne the harts of good fellowes, and make ruffians become Preciſians, in hope to mount higher then Highgate, by the fall of Biſhopſgate; ſome of your well-willers hold a certaine charitable opiniõ, that to reforme yourſelfe, were your beſt Reformatiõ. Good Diſcipline would doe many good; and doe Martin no harme; had he leyſure from trainyng of other, to trayne himſelfe, and as one termed it, to trimme his owne beard. Howbeit in my Method, Knowledge would go before Practiſe, and Doctrine before Diſcipline. I challenge fewe, or none for learning, which I rather looue as my Frẽd, or honour as my Patron then profeſſe as my Facultie: but ſome approoued good

Digitized by Google

Schollars of both Vniuerſities, and ſome honorable wiſemen of a higher Vniuerſitie, take Martin to be none of the greateſt Clarkes in England; and maruell, how he ſhould preſume to be a Doctour of Diſcipline, that hath much-a-doe to ſhewe himſelfe a Maſter of Doctrine. For mine owne part, I hope he is a better Doctriniſt, then Diſciplniſt: or elſe I muſt needes conclude; Pride is a buſie man, and a deeper Counſellour of ſtates, then of himſelfe. Publique Proiectes become publique perſons; and may doe well in ſome other, being well employed: but priuate perſons, and the common crewes of Platformers, might haue moſt vſe of priuate deſignements, appropriat to their owne Voca / tion, Profeſſion, or qualitie. When I finde Martin as neat a reformer of his owne life, as of other mens actiōs; it ſhal go hard, but I wil in ſom meaſure proportion my cōmendation to the ſingularite of his deſert; which I would be glad to crowne with a garland of preſent, and a diademe of future prayſe. For I long to ſee a Larke without a creaſt; and would trauaile farre, to diſcoouer a Reformer without a fault; or onely with ſuch a fault, as for the rareneſſe ſhould deſerue, or for the ſtrangeneſſe might challenge, to be Chronicled, like the Eclipſe of the Sunne. The State Demonſtratiue, not ouerlaboured at this inſtant, would fayne be employed in blaſoning a

Digitized by Google

creature of ſuch perfections: and the very ſoule of Charitie thirſteth to drinke of that cleere *Aqua Vitæ*. It is not the firſt time, that I haue preferred a Gentleman of deedes, before a Lord of wordes: and what if I once by way of familiar diſcourſe ſayd? I was a Proteſtant in the Antecedent, but a Papiſt in the Conſequent: for I liked Faith in the Premiſſes, but wiſhed works in the Concluſion: as S. Paul beginneth with Iuſtification, but endeth with Sanctification: & the Schoole-men reconcile many Confutations in one diſtinction; We are iuſtified by Faith apprehenſiuely; by Workes declaratiuely; by the bloud of Chriſt effectiuely. I hope, it is no euill ſigne, for the flower to flooriſh, for the tree to fructifie, for the fier to warme, for the Sunne to ſhine, for Truth to embrace Vertue, for the Intellectuall good to practiſe the Morall good, for the cauſe to effect. He meant honeſtly, that ſaid merrily; He tooke S. Auſtins, and S. Gregories by Pauls, to be the good frendes of S. Faithes vnder Paules. What needeth more? If your Reformation be ſuch a reſtoratiue, as you pretende; what letteth, but that the world ſhould preſently behold a Viſible difference betweene the fruites of the / pure and the corrupt diet? Why ceaſeth the heauenly Diſcipline, to penne her owne Apologie, not in one or two ſcribled Pamflets of counterfait

Digitized by Google

Complements, but in a thouſand liuing Volumes of heauenly Vertues? Diuine Cauſes were euer wont to fortifie themſelues, and weaken their aduerſaries, with diuine Effectes, as conſpicuous, as the brighteſt Sunne-ſhine. The Apoſtles, and Primitiue founders of Churches were no railers, or ſcoffers: but painfull trauailers, but Zelous Preachers, but holly liuers, but fayre-ſpoken, mild, and loouing men, euen like Moſes, like Dauid, like the ſonne of Dauid; the three gentleſt perſons, that euer walked vpon Earth. Where ſoeuer they became, it appeared by the whole manner of their meeke, and ſweet proceding that they had bene the ſeruants of a meeke Lord, and the Diſciples of a ſweet Maſter: in ſo much, that many nations, which knew not God, interteined them, as the Ambaſſadours, or Oratours of ſome God; and were mightily perſuaded, to conceiue a diuine opinion of him, whom they ſo diuinely Preached; & euen to beleeue, that he could be no leſſe, then the ſonne of the great God. Their miracles got the harts of numbers: but their Sermons, and Orations, were greater wonders, then their miracles, and woon more rauiſhed ſoules to heauen. Their Doctrine was full of power: their Diſcipline full of Charitie: their Eloquence celeſtiall: their Zeale inuincible: their Life inuiolable: their Conuerſation loouing: their Profeſſion, Humilitie; their Practiſe, Humili-

Digitized by Google

tie; their Conqueſt, Humilitie. Read the ſweet Eccleſiaſticall Hyſtories, repleniſhed with many cordiall narrations of their ſouerain Vertues: and peruſe the moſt rigorous Cenſures of their profeſſed enemies, Plinie, Suetonius, Tacitus, Antoninus, Symachus; Lucian, Libanius, / Philoſtratus, Eunapius, or any like, Latiniſt, or Grecian, (I except not Porphyrie, Hierocles, or Iulian himſelfe): and what Chriſtian, or heathen iudgement, with any indifferencie can denie, but they alwayes demeaned themſelues, like well-affected, faire-conditioned, innocent, and kinde perſons; many wayes gratious, and ſomewayes admirable? Peace was their warre: Vnitie their multiplication: good wordes, and good deedes, their edifying inſtruments: a generall humanitie toward all, wherefoeuer they trauailed; and a ſpeciall beneficence toward euery one, with whom they conuerſed, one of their Souerain meanes, for the Propagation of Chriſtianitie. They knew his mercifull, and Godfull meaning, that in an infinite and incomprehenſible looue, deſcended from heauen to ſaue all vpon Earth, and remembred how gratiouſly his diuine Selfe voutſaued, to conuerſe with Publicans, and other ſinners: what a ſweet and peerleſſe Example of humbleſt Humilitie he gaue his Diſciples, when with his owne immaculate handes he waſhed their feete: how appliably he framed

Digitized by Google

himſelfe to the proper diſpoſition of euery Nation in drawing vnto him the Magicians of the Eaſt, with the wondrous ſight of a new Starre; in moouing the Iewes with miracles, and Parables; in ſhewing himſelfe a Prophet, & the very Meſſias, to the Samaritans; in ſending eloquent Paule to the eloquent Grecians, Zealous Peter to the deuout Hebrues, and vertuous Romans, his brother Andrew to the ſtout Scythians, incredulous Thomas to the infidell Parthians, and ſo forth: what a loouing, and precious deare Teſtament he left behinde him, and with how vnſpeakable fauour he bequeathed and diſpoſed the rich hereditaments, and ineſtimable gooddes of his kingdome: how neerly it concerned the members of one boddy, / without the leaſt inteſtine diſagreement, or faction, to tender and cherriſh one another with mutuall indulgence: how frutefully the militant Church had already encreaſed by Concord, like a Plant of the triumphant Church, whoſe bliſſefull conſort incomparably paſſeth the ſweeteſt harmonie. The effect of ſuch diuine motions was heauenly: and whiles that celeſtiall courſe continued, with an inuiolable conſent of Vnited mindes, euen in ſome diſſenſion of opinions, (for there was euer ſome difference of opinions) the Goſpell reigned, and the Church flooriſhed miraculouſly. It would make the hart of Pietie, to weepe for ioyfull

Digitized by Google

compaſſion, to remember how the Bloud of thoſe, and thoſe moſt-patient, but more glorious Martyrs, that might be ſlaine, but not vanquiſhed, was the Seede of the Church. The Church, that grew victorious, and mightie, by the beheading of Paule, and Iames; by the crucifying of Peter, Andrew, Philip, and Simon; by the ſtoning of Stephen; by the burning of Marke, and Barnabas; by the flaying of Bartholmew; by the murdering of Thomas with a dart, of Mathew with a ſword, of Matthias with an axe, of Iames Alphæus with a club; of how many renowned Martyrs with how many cruell and tyrannicall torments; immortall monuments of their inuincible Faith, and moſt honorable Conſtancie. When Aſperitie, and Diſcorde, degenerating from that Primitiue order; tooke an other courſe, and began to proceede, more like Furies of hell, then Saincts of the Church, or honeſt neighbours of the world; alas, what followed? And vnleſſe we retire to our principles, although miſchief vpon miſchief be bad enough, yet ruine vpon ruine will be worſe. It is not a ruffianly ſtile, or a tumultuous plot, that will amend the matter: ſome Apoſtolicall vertues would doe well; and that-ſame / Euangelicall humilitie were much-worth. In the meane ſeaſon, ſuerly reuerend Biſhops, and learned Doctours, albeit corruptible men, ſhould be

Digitized by Google

meeter to adminiſter or gouerne Churches, then luſtie Cutters, or inſufficient Plotters, albeit reformed creatures. Sweet Martin, aſwell Iunior, as Senior, (for Iuniours, and Seniours are all one, as old Maſter Raye ſayd in his maioraltie) and you ſweet whirlewinds, that ſo fiercely beſturr you at this inſtant; now agayne, and agayne I beſeech you, either be content to take a ſweeter courſe; or take all for me. My intereſt in theſe cauſes is ſmall: and howſoeuer ſome buſie heades looue to ſet themſelues aworke, when they might be otherwiſe occupied, yet by their fauours, there is a certaine thing, that paſſeth all Vnderſtanding; which I commend Vniuerſally vnto all, eſpecially vnto my frends, and ſingularly vnto miſelfe. *Nulla ſalus bello: pacem te poſcimus omnes.* No Law to the Feciall Law; nor any Conqueſt to Pacification. Would Chriſt, Reformation could be entreated to begin at itſelfe; and Diſcipline would be ſo good, as to ſhew by example of her owne houſe, wher ſhe inhabiteth, and conſorteth, what a Precious, and heauenly thing it were for a whole kingdome, to liue in ſuch a celeſtiall harmony of Pure Vertues, and all perfections. Theoricks, and Idees are quickly imagined in an aſpiring phantaſie: but an inuiolable Practiſe of a diuine excellencie in humane frailtie, without exceſſe, defect, or abuſe, doubtleſſe were

Digitized by Google

a Chriſtall worth the ſeeing, and a glorious Mirrour of eternall Imitation. When Contemplation hath a little more experience, it ſhall finde, that Action is ſcantly ſo ſmooth, and nimble a creature, as Speculation : two notable Preſidẽts *in Concreto*, more rare, then twentie ſingular Types *in abſtractõ* : they that ſhoote beyond the marke, in / imagination, come ſhort in tryall: good, intẽtions were neuer too-rife, & the beſt intentiõs haue gone aſtray. All men are not of one mould : there is as great difference of Miniſters and Aldermen, as of other perſons: euen where the ſpirite is ſtrong, the fleſh is ſometime founde weake enough; and the world, is a world of temptations, murmurings, offences, quarrels, trespaſſes, crimes, and continuall troubles in one ſort or other.

If the preciſeſt, and moſt ſcrupulous Treatiſes haue much-adooe to vphold the credit of any perfection, or eſtimation, with their owne aſſociats ; (how many heads, ſo many plottes) what may Reaſon conceiue of the aſſurance, or maturitie of their iudicīall or other Morall Proceedings *in Eſſe*? When His, and His Scripture, after ſome prettie pauſing, is become Apocryphall with his, and his owne adherents, whoſe writing was Scripture with many of them; how can any of them aſcertaine, or reſolue themſelues of the Canonicall incorrup-

Digitized by Google

tion, or autenticall omniſufficiencie of his, or his actuall gouernement? When euen He, that within theſe fewe yeares was alledged for Text, hath ſo emprooued his autoritie with a number of his feruenteſt brethren, that he will now be ſcantly allowed for a current Gloſſe; why ſhould defeated Affection any longer delude itſelfe with a preiudicate & vayne imagination of an Alchimiſticall Diſcipline, not ſo ſweet in conceit, as ſower in proofe; and as defectiue in needfull prouiſion, as exceſſiue in vnneedfull preſumption? If Second cogitations be riper, and ſounder, then the firſt; may not a Third, or Fourth conſultations take more & more aduiſement? If Biſhops-gate be infected, is it vnpoſſible for Alders-gate to be attainted? and if neither can be long cleere in an Vniuerſall plague of Corruption, what reaſon / hath Zeale to fly from Gods bleſſing into a warme Sunne: What a wiſedome were it, to chaunge for the worſe? or what a notorious follie were it, to innouate, without infallible aſſurance of the better? What Politique ſtate, or conſiderate people, euer laboured any Alteration, Ciuill, or Eccleſiaſticall, without Pregnant euidence of ſome ſingular, or notable Good, as certaine in conſequence, as important in eſtimation? To be ſhort, (for I haue already bene ouer-long, and ſhall hardlie qualifie thoſe headdie younkers with

Digitized by Google

any Diſcourſe) had Martin his luſt, or Penry his wiſh, or Vdal his mynde, or Browne his will, or Ket his phanſie, or Barrow his pleaſure, or Greenwood his harts-deſire, or the freſheſt Practitioners their longing, (euen to be Iudges of the Conſiſtorie, or Fathers Conſcript of Senate, or *Domine fac totum*, or themſelues wott not what); there might fall-out fiue hundred practicable caſes, and a thouſand diſputable queſtions in a yeare, (the world muſt be reframed anew, or ſuch points decided) wherewith they neuer diſquieted their braynes, and wherein the learnedeſt of them could not ſay A. to the Arches, or B. to a Battledore. If the grauer motioners of Diſcipline (who no doubt are learneder men, and might be wiſer: but M. Trauers, M. Cartwright, Doctour Chapman, and all the grayer heads begin to be ſtale with theſe Noouelliſts) haue bethought themſelues vpon all caſes, and cautels in Practiſe, of whatſoeuer nature, and haue thorowly prouided againſt all poſſible miſchieffs, inconueniences, and irregularities, aſwell future, as preſent; I am glad they come ſo well prepared: ſuerly ſome of the earneſteſt and egreſt ſollicitours, are not yet ſo furniſhed. Wordes are good fellowes, and merry men: but in my poore opinion, it were not amiſſe for ſome ſweating, and fierce / dooers at this inſtant, that would downe with Clement,

Digitized by Google

and vp with Hildebrand, either to know more at home, or to ſturr leſſe abroad. It is no trifling matter in a Monarchie, to hoiſe-vp a new Autoritie, like that of the Iewiſh Conſiſtorie aboue Kinges, or that of the Lacedemonian Ephorie aboue Tyrants, or that of the Romane Senate aboue Emperours. Howbeit if there be no remedie, but M. Fier muſt be the Paſtour, M. Aier the Doctour, goodman Water the Deacon, and goodman Earth the Alderman of the Church; let the young Calfe, and the old Aſſe draw Cuttes, whither of their heads ſhall weare the garland. And thus much in generalitie touching Martinizing, being vrged to defend it, if I durſt: but for feare of indignation I durſt not. The ſeuerall particularities, and more gingerly nicityes of rites, ſignes, termes, and what not? I referre to the diſcuſſion of profeſſed Deuines: or reſerue for more leyſure and fitter occaſion.

As for that new-created Spirite, whom double V. like an other Doctour Fauſtus, threateneth to coniure-vpp at leyſure, (for I muſt returne to the terrible creature, that ſubſcribeth himſelfe Martins Double V. and will needes alſo be my Tittle-tittle) were that Spirite diſpoſed to appeare in his former likeneſſe, and to put the Necromancer to his purgation, he could peraduenture make the

Digitized by Google

coniuring wiſard forſake the center of his Circle, and betake him to the circumference of his heeles. Simple Creature, iwis thou art too-young an Artiſt *to coniure him* vp, that can exorciſe thee downe: or to *lamback him* with *ten yeares* preparation, that can lamſkin thee with a dayes warning. Out vpon thee for a cowardly lambacker, that ſtealeſt-in at the back doore; and thinkeſt to filch aduauntage on the back wing. / Knaues are backbiters; whores bellybiters; and both ſheepebiters. Pedomancie fitter for ſuch Coniurers, then either Chiromancie, or Necromancie, or any Familiar Spirite, but contempt. It is ſome-boddyes fortune, to be haunted with backfrendes: and I could report a ſtraunge Dialogue betwixt the Clarke of Backchurch, and the Chaunter of Pancridge, that would make the better viſard of the two to bluſh: but I fauour modeſt eares; and a thouſand honeſt tongues will iuſtifie it to thy face, Thou art as it were a groſe Idiot, and a very *Aſſe in preſenti*, to imagine that thou couldeſt go ſcotfree in this ſawcy reckoning, although the partie coniured ſhould ſay nothing, but Mum. Honeſtie goeth neuer Vnbacked: and Truth is a ſufficient Patron to itſelfe: and I know One, that hath written a Pamflet, intituled *Cock-alilly*, or *The white ſon of the Black Art.* But he that can *maſſacre Martins wit*, (thou remembreſt thine owne phraſe) can rott Pap-hatchets braine:

Digitized by Google

and he that can *tickle Mar-prelate with taunts*, can twitch double V. to the quicke: albeit he threaten no leſſe, then the ſiege of Troye in his Note-booke; and his penne reſounde, like the harneſſed woombe of the Troian horſe. I haue ſeene a broad ſword ſtand at the doore, when a poinado hath entered: and although I am neither Vlyſſes, nor Outis, yet perhaps I can tell, how, No-boddy may doe, that ſomeboddy cannot doe. Polyphemus was a mightie fellow, and coniured Vlyſſes companions into excrements: (few Giants euer ſo hideous, as Polyphemus): but poore Outis was euen with him, and No-boddy coniured his goggle eye, as well. I prey-thee ſweet Pap, inſult not ouer-much vpon quiet men: though my penne be no-boddy at a hatchet, and my tongue leſſe then no-boddy at a beetle; yet Patience loouetb not to be made a / cart of Croiden; and no ſuch libbard for a liuely Ape, as for dead Silence. The merry Gentleman deuiſeth to diſport himſelfe, and his Copeſmates, with a pleaſurable conceit of *quaking eares:* and *all my workes, at leaſt ſix ſheetes in quarto, called by miſelfe, The firſt tome of my familiar Epiſtle:* two impudent lyes, and ſo knowen notoriouſly. He might as truly forge any lewd, or villanous report of any man in England; and for his labour challenge to be preferred to the Clark-ſhip of the whetſtone: which he is hable to main-

Digitized by Google

taine ſumptuouſly, with a mint of queint, and Vncouth Similes, daintie monſters of Nature. I muſt deale plainly with the Spawne of rãke Calumnie: his knauiſh, & fooliſh malice palpably bewrayeth it ſelf in moſt-odious fictions; meet to garniſh the foreſayd famous office of the whet-ſtone. But what ſayth his owne couragious Penne, of his owne aduenturous eares? *If ripping-vp of Liues make ſport, haue with thee knuckle deepe: it ſhal neuer be ſayd, that I dare not venter myne eares, where Martin hazards his necke.* Some men are not ſo prodigall of their eares, how lauiſh ſoeuer Martin may ſeeme of his necke; & albeit euery mã cannot compile ſuch graund Volumes as Euphues, or reare ſuch mightie tomes, as Pap-hatchet; yet he might haue thought, other poore men haue tongues, and pennes to ſpeake ſome-thing yet, when they are prouoked vnreaſonably. But looſers may haue their wordes, and Comedians their actes: ſuch drie bobbers can luſtely ſtrike at other, and cunningly rapp themſelues. He hath not played the Vicemaſter of Poules, and the Foolemaſter of the Theater for naughtes; him-ſelfe a mad lad, as euer twanged, neuer troubled with any ſubſtance of witt, or circumſtance of honeſtie, ſometime the fiddle-ſticke of Oxford, now the very bable of London; would fayne forſooth haue ſome / other eſteemed, as all men

Digitized by Google

value him. A workeman is eaſely deſcried by his termes: euery man ſpeaketh according to his Art: I am threatened with a Bable, and Martin menaced with a Comedie: a fit motion for a Ieſter, and a Player, to try what may be done by employmēt of his facultie: Bables & Comedies are parlous fellowes *to decipher, and diſcourage men*, (that is the Point) with their wittie flowtes, and learned Ierkes; enough to laſh any man out-of countenance. Na, if you ſhake the painted ſcabbard at me, I haue done: and all you, that tender the preſeruation of your good names, were beſt to pleaſe Pap-hatchet, and fee Euphues betimes, for feare leſſe he be mooued, or ſome One of his Apes hired, to make a Playe of you; and then is your credit quite vn-done for euer, and euer: Such is the publique reputation of their Playes. He muſt needes *be diſcouraged*, whom they *decipher*. Better, anger an hundred other, then two ſuch; that haue the Stage at commaundement, and can furniſh-out Vices, and Diuels at their pleaſure. Gentlemen, beware of a *chafing-penne, that ſweateth-out whole realmes of Paper*, and whole Theaters of Ieſtes: tis auenture, if he dye not of the Paper-ſweat, ſhould he chaunce to be neuer ſo little ouerchafed. For the Ieſt-dropſie is not ſo peremptorie. But no point of Cunning, to the *Tale of the Tubb*: that is the profounde

Digitized by Google

myſterie, and the very Secret of Secrets. The ſweet Siſters Anſwer, *that in her conſcience thought Lecherie the Superficies of ſinne*, (a rare word with women, but by her aunſwer ſhe ſhould ſeeme to be learned): the true Tale of one of Martins godly ſonnes, *that hauing the Companie of one of his ſiſters in the open fieldes, ſaid he would not ſmoother-vp ſinne, and deale in hugger-mugger againſt his conſcience:* (the Hiſtoriographer hath many priuie intelligences): the ſober tale of / the *Eldeſt Elder, that receiued fortie Angels at his Table, where he ſat with no leſſe then fortie good diſhes of the greateſt dainties, in more pompe, then a Pope:* (he was not of the ſtarued Pythagorean, or Platonicall diet: but liberall exhibition may maintaine good hoſpitalitie): the Zelous *Looue letter, or a Corinthian Epiſtle to the widow, as honeſt a woman, as euer burnt malt:* (the wooer, or the Regiſter of Aretines Religion): *the holie Othe of the Martiniſt, that thinking to ſweare by his conſcience, ſwore by his Concupiſcence*: (did not he forget himſelfe, that expreſly affirmed? *Martin will not ſweare: but with In deede, In ſooth, and In truth, hele cogg the dye of deceit:*) theſe, and the reſt of thoſe bawdie Inuentions, wherewith that brothelliſh Pamflet floweth, ſmell ſomewhat ſtrongly of the Pumpe; and ſhewe the credibilitie of the Autor, that dareth alledge any impudent, pro-

Digitized by Google

phane, or blaſphemous fiction to ſerue his turne. So he may ſoone make-vp the autenticall Legendary of his *Hundred merrie Tales* : as true peraduenture, as Lucians true narrations ; or the heroicall hiſtoryes of Rabelais ; or the braue Legendes of Errant Knights ; or the egregious prankes of Howle-glaſſe, Frier Ruſh, Frier Tuck, and ſuch like ; or the renowned *Bugiale* of Poggius, Racellus, Luſcus, Cincius, and that whole Italian crew of merry Secretaryes in the time of Pope Martin the fift ; of whom our worſhipfull Clarkes of the whetſtone, Doctour Clare, Doctour Bourne, M. Scoggin, M. Skelton, M. Wakefield, diuers late Hiſtoriologers, and haply this new Tale-founder himſelfe, learned their moſt-wonder-full facultie. *Committing of matrimonie ; carouſing the ſapp of the Church ; cutting at the bumme Carde of conſcience ; beſmearing of conſcience ; ſpelling of Our Father in a horne-booke ; the railing Religion ;* and a whole ſinke of ſuch arrant phraſes, ſauour whotly / of the ſame Lucianicall breath, & diſcoouer the minion Secretarie aloofe. Faith, quoth himſelfe, thou wilt be caught by thy ſtile : Indeede what more eaſie, then to finde the man by his humour, the Midas by his eares, the Calfe by his tongue, the gooſe by his quill, the Play-maker by his ſtile, the hatchet by the Pap ? Albertus Secrets, Poggius Fables, Bebelius ieſtes, Scoggins tales, Wake-

Digitized by Google

fields lyes, Parſon Darcyes knaueries, Tarletons trickes, Eldertons Ballats, Greenes Pamflets, Euphues Similes, double Vs phraſes, are too-well knowen, to go vnknowen. Where the Veine of Braggadocio is famous, the arterie of Pappadocio cannot be obſcure. Gentlemen, I haue giuē you a taſt of his Sugerloafe, that weeneth Sidneyes daintyes, Aſchams cōfites, Cheekes ſuccats, Smithes cōſerues, and Mores iunkets, nothing comparable to his pap. Some of you dreamed of Electuaryes of Gemmes, and other precious reſtoratiues; of the quinteſſence of Amber, & Pearle diſſolued, of I wott not what incredible delicacies: but his Gemmemint is not alwayes current; and as buſie men, ſo painted boxes, and gallipots muſt haue a Vacation. Yet wellfare the ſweet hart of Dia-pap, Dia-fig, and Dia-nut, three ſoueraine Defenſatiues of the Commonwealth, and three cordiall Comfortatiues of the Church. It is a good hearing, when good fellowes haue a care of the Commonwealth, and the Church: and a godly motion, when Interluders leaue penning their pleaſurable Playes, to become Zealous Eccleſiaſticall writers. *Bona fide*, ſome haue written notablie againſt Martiniſme: (it were a buſie taſke for the credibleſt Preciſian, to empeach the credit of Doctour Bancroft, or Doctour Sutcliff): but this Mammaday hath excellently knocked himſelfe on

Digitized by Google

the ſconſe with his owne hatchet. I will caſt away no more inke vpon a Com / pounde of ſimples. The Pap is like the hatchet: the fig like the nut: the Country-cuff like the hangmans apron: the dog like the dog: John Anoke, and Iohn Aſtile like the baily of Withernam: the ſigne of the Crabtre cudgell like twackcoate Lane: Martins hanging like Pappadocios mowing: Huff, Ruff, and Snuffe, the three tame ruffians of the Church, like double V: neuer a laye in the barrell, better herring: the beginning, the midſt, and the end, all in one pickle. Some roſes amongſt prickes, doe well: and ſome lillyes amongſt thornes, would haue done no harme. But Enuie hath no fanſie to the roſe of the garden: and what careth Malice for the lilly of the Valley? Would, fayre Names were ſpelles, and charmes againſt fowle Affections: and in ſome reſpectes I could wiſh, that Diuinitie would giue Humanitie leaue to conclude otherwiſe, then I muſt. I could in curteſie be content, and in hope of Recõciliation deſirous, to mitigate the harſheſt ſentences, and mollifie the hardeſt termes. But can Truth lye: or Diſcretion approoue follie: or Iudgement allowe Vanitie: or Modeſtie abide Impudencie: or good manners ſooth bad ſpeaches? He that penned the abooue-mentioned *Cock-alilly*, ſaw reaſon to diſplay the Black Artiſt in his collier coolours: and thought it moſt vn-

Digitized by Google

reaſonable, to ſuffer ſuch light and emptie veſſels, to make ſuch a lowde, and prowde rumbling in the ayre. Other had rather heare the learned Nightingale, then the Vnlearned Parrat; or taſt the wing of a Larke, then the legge of a Rauen. The fineſt wittes preferre the looſeſt period in M. Aſcham, or Sir Philip Sidney, before the trickſieſt page in Euphues, or Pap-hatchet. The Muſes, ſhame to remember ſome freſhe quaffers of Helicon: and which of the Graces, or Vertues bluſheth not, to name ſome luſtie toſpots / of Rhetorique? The ſtately Tragedie ſcorneth the trifling Comedie: and the trifling Comedie flowteth the new Ruffianiſme. Wantonneſſe was neuer ſuch a ſwill-bowle of ribaldry: nor Idleneſſe euer ſuch a carowſer of knauerie. What honeſt mynde, or Ciuill diſpoſition, is not accloied with theſe noiſome, & naſty gargariſmes? Where is the poliſhed and refined Eloquence, that was wont to bedeck, and embelliſh Humanity? Why ſhould learning be a niggard of his excellent gifts, when Impudencie is ſo prodigall of his raſcall triſh-traſh? What daintie, or neat Iudgement beginneth not to hate his old looue, and loath his auncient delight, the Preſſe, the moſt-honorable Preſſe, the moſt-villanous Preſſe? Who ſmileth not at thoſe, and thoſe trim-trammes of gawdie wittes, how flooriſhing Wittes, how fading witts?

Digitized by Google

Who laugheth not at *Il'e, Il'e, Il'e*; or gibeth not at ſome hundred Pibalde fooleryes, in that hare braind Declamation? They whom it neerelyeſt pincheth, cannot ſilence their iuſt diſdaine: and I am forcibly vrged to intimate my whole Cenſure, though without hatred to the perſon, or derogation from any of his commendable gift, yet not without ſpeciall diſlike of the bad matter, and generall condemnation of the vile forme. The whole Worke, a bald Toy, full of ſtale, and woodden Ieſtes; and one of the moſt paltry thinges, that euer was publiſhed by graduate of either Vniuerſitie: good for nothing but to ſtop muſtard pottes, or rubbe gridirons, or feather rattes neaſtes, or ſuch like homely vſe. For Stationers are already too-full of ſuch Realmes, and Commonwealthes of Waſt-paper, and finde more gaine in the lillypot blanke, then in the lillypot Euphued: a day, or two fine for ſheetes, and afterward good for groſers. *Vanitas vanitatum*, the fome of grudge, the froth of leuitie, the / ſcum of corruption, and the very ſcurfe of raſcallitie: nothing, worthy of a Schollar, or a Ciuill Gentleman: altogether phantaſticall, and fonde, without ryme, or reaſon: ſo odly hudled, and bungled togither, in ſo madbraine ſort, and with ſo braineſicke ſtuffe, that in an Ouer flowe of ſo many friuolous, and ridiculous Pamflets, I

Digitized by Google

ſcarſely know any One in all points, ſo incomparably vayne and abſurde, whereunto I may reſemble that moſt toyiſhe and piperly trifle, the fruite of an addle, and lewd wit, long-ſince dedicated to a diſſolute, and deſperate Licentiouſneſſe. Oh what a *Magnifico* would he be, were his purſe as heauie, as his head is light, and his hart franke? Euen that ſame Very Mirrour of Madneſſe, hangeth togither with ſome more coherence of reaſon; and ſmelleth not ſo rankly of the Tauerne, the Alehouſe, the Stewes, the Cuckingſtoole, or other ſuch honeſt places, as that drunkē, and ſhameleſſe Declamation; Vnbeſeeming any, but an Oratour of Bedlam, a Rhetorician of Bridewell, or a Discourſer of Primeroſe hill. And although that ſame Frēch Mirrour, be *ex Profeſſo* deuiſed in a mad gariſh Veyne, and ſtuffed with geere homely enough, fit for a Libertine & frantique Theame: yet doth it no[t] ſo baſely borrow of the Ruffians bagge, the Tapſters ſpigot, the Pedlars pack, the Tinkars bugget, the Knaues truſſe, and the Roges fardle: vnto all which, and other Autors of like reputation, but chiefly to the Hangmans apron, (that, that is the biggin of his wit), this worthy Autour is deeply beholding for great part of his fine conceits, and dainty learning; precious ware for Euphued creatures, and phantaſticall colts: whoſe wild and madbraine humour nothing fitteth

Digitized by Google

ſo iuſt, as the ſtaleſt dudgen, or abſurdeſt balductum, that they, or their mates can inuent, in odd and awke ſpeaches, diſguiſedly ſhapen after / the antick faſhion, & monſtrouſly ſhorne, like old Captaine Liſters ſpănel. They that affect ſuch ruffaniſh braueryes, and deuide their roiſterdoiſtering Ieſtes into Cuttes, ſlaſhes, and foines, may beſtow the reading: for any other of whatſoeuer qualitie, or calling, it will do them aſmuch good, as dirt in their ſhooes, or draffe in their bellyes: and in good ſooth there is all the vſe, Ciuill or Eccleſiaſticall, that I can finde of this Babees papp: whom for his ſweet interteinement with papp, figg, and nut, I officiouſly recommende to the Ship of Fooles, and the Galeaſſe of knaues. When he vſeth himſelfe with more modeſtie, and his friendes with more diſcretion, I may alter my ſtile: (let him chaunge, and I am chaunged): or if already he be aſhamed of that coniuring leafe, foiſted in like a Bumbarde, I haue ſayd nothing. Till he diſclaimeth his iniurie, in Print; or confeſſeth his ouerſight, in writing; or ſignifieth his Penitence, in ſpeach: the abuſed partie, that had reaſon to ſet-downe the Premiſſes without fauour, hath cauſe to iuſtifie his owne hand without feare; and is aſwell in equitie to auowe Truth, as in charitie to diſauowe Malice. At Trinitie hall: this fift of Nouember: 1589.

Digitized by Google

SO then of Pappadocio: whom neuertheleſſe I eſteeme a hundred times learneder, and a thouſand times honeſter, then this other Braggadocio; that hath more learning, then honeſtie, and more money then learning, although he truly intitle himſelfe, Pierce Penniles, and be elſewhere ſtiled the Gentle/man Raggamuffin. Naſh, the Ape of Greene, Greene the Ape of Euphues, Euphues, the Ape of Enuie, the three famous mammets of the preſſe, and my three notorious feudiſts, drawe all in a yoke: but ſome Schollars excell their maſters; and ſome luſtie bloud will do more at a deadly pull, then two, or three of his yokefellowes. It muſt go hard, but he wil emprooue himſelfe, the incomparable darling of immortall Vanitie. Howbeit his frendes could haue wiſhed, he had not ſhowen himſelfe to the world, ſuch a ridiculous *Suffenus*, or *Shakerly* to himſelfe, by aduauncing the triumphall garland vpon his owne head, before the leaſt ſkermiſh for the victorie: which if he euer obtaine by any valiancie, or brauure, (as he

Digitized by Google

weeneth himſelfe, the valianteſt and braueſt Actour, that euer managed penne) I am his bondman in fetters, and refuſe not the humbleſt vaſſalage to the ſole of his boote. Much may be done by cloſe confederacie, in all ſortes of cooſenage, and legierdemane: *Monſieur Pontalais* in French, or *Meſſer Vnico* in Italian, neuer deuiſed ſuch a nipping Comedie, as might be made in Engliſh, of ſome leagers in the queint practiques of the Croſbiting Art: but I haue ſeene many Bear-wardes, and Butchers in my time; and haue heard of the one, what belongeth to Apes; and haue learned of the other, not to be affrayde of a dooſen horned beaſtes: albeit ſome one of them ſhould ſeeme as dreadfull, as the furious dun Cowe of Dunſmore heath, the terribleſt ſoman of Sir Guy. Æſops Oxe, though he be a ſuer ploughman, is but a ſlowe workeman: and Greenes Ape, though he be a nimble Iuggler, is no ſuer executioner. Yet well-worth the Maſter-Ape, and Captaine mammet, that had a hatchet, aſwell as Papp; a Country cuffe aſwell as a figge; a crabtree cudgell, aſwell as a nutt; ſomething of a mans-/face, with more of an Apes-face. Had his pen bene muzzled at the firſt, as his mouth hath bene bunged ſince, theſe freſh Euphuiſtes would neuer haue aduentured vpon the whip, or the bobb: but Silence is a

Digitized by Google

ſlaue in a chaine; and Patience the common Pack-horſe of the world. Euen this brat of an Apeſclogge, that can but mowgh with his mouth, gnaſh with his teeth, quauer with his ten bones, and brandiſh his gooſe-quill; preſuming of my former ſufferance, layeth about him with the ſaid quill, as if it were poſſeſſed with the ſprite of *Orlando Furioſo*, or would teach the clubb of Gargantua to ſpeake Engliſh. For the flaile of *Aiax* diſtrawght, or the clubb of Hercules enraged, were but hedge-ſtakes of the old world; and vnworth the naming in an age of puiſſance emprooued horriblie. The neweſt Legendes of moſt hideous exploits, may learne a new Art to kill-cow men with peremptorie termes, and bugges-wordes of certaine death. Pore I muſt needes be plagued; plagued? na, brayed & ſquiſed to nothing, that am matched with ſuch a Gargãtuiſt, as can deuoure me quicke in a ſallat; and thundreth more direfull threatnings againſt me that onely touched him; then huge Polyphemus rored againſt Vlyſſes, that blinded him: *Genus irritabile Vatum.* The generation of rauing Poets, is a ſwarme of gad-bees; and the anger of a moodie rimeſter, the furie of a Waſpe. A mad Tiger, not like a mad Waſpe; and a chafed Wildbore, not comparable to a chafed gad-bee. Take heede of the man, whom Nature hath

Digitized by Google

marked with a gag-tooth; Art furniſhed with a gag-tongue; and Exerciſe armed with a gag-penne; as cruell and murdrous weapons, as euer drewe bloud. The beſt is, who hath time, hath life. He meaneth not to come vpon me with a cowardly ſtratageme of Scarborough / warning: he vſeth a certaine gallant Homericall Figure, called *Hyſteron-proteron*, or the Cart before the horſe; & with a reſolution menaceth the effect, before the Cauſes be begotten. When the iron Cart is made, and the fierie horſes foled, they ſhall bring the mightie Battring-ram of termes, and the great Ordinance of miracles, to towne: aſke not then, how he will plague me. In the meane ſeaſon, it is a woonder to ſee, how courageouſly he taketh-on with his hoſtiſſes needles, and his botchers bodkins. Indeede a good Souldiour will make a ſhrewd ſhift with any weapons: but it is a maruelous hart, that threatneth Ruine, ruine, ruine, with the dint of a bodkin, and the blade of an awle. Where ſuch an other Rodomont, ſo furious, ſo valorous, ſo redoubtable? There is a peece of a good old Song, peraduenture as auncient, as the noble Legende of Syr Beuis, or Sir Launcelot du Lake:

Dubba-dubba-dubb, kill him with a clubb:
And he will not dye, kill him with a flye.

Digitized by Google

He that made that Ryme in ieſt, little conſidered, what a gad-fly may doe in earneſt. It is ſmall wiſedome, to contemne the ſmalleſt enemy; the gad-fly is a little creature; but ſome little creatures be ſtingers: neuer fauchon better managed, then ſome tiny penneknifes: and what will he do, when he ruſheth vpon me with the tempeſtuous Engins of his owne wit, that keepeth ſuch a horrible coile with his Schoolefellowes poinardo? An Ape is neuer to ſeeke of a good face, to ſet vpon the matter. Bleſſed Euphues, thou onely happy, that haſt a traine of ſuch good countenances, in thy flooriſhing greene-motley liuery: miſerable I, the vnhappieſt on earth, that am left deſolate. Ah but that might be endured: euery mã is not borne, to be the leader of a bande: euery birde carrieth not Argus eyes diſplayed in her taile: Fame is not euery / boddies Sainct: to be forſaken, is no great matter; to be vtterly vndone, is miſerable. That, and the Vnmercifulleſt perſecution that may be inuented, is cruelly proclaimed againſt quiet him, that was once thronged and peſtred with followers: but when he began to giue-ouer that greene haunt, and betooke himſelfe to a riper Profeſſion, Diomedes companions were changed into birdes. Times alter: and as Fortune hath more ſectaries, then Virtue; ſo Pleaſure hath more adherents,

Digitized by Google

then Proffit. I had no ſooner ſhaken of my yoũg troupe, whõ I could not aſſociate as before, but they were feſtiually reinterteined by ſome nimble wightes, that could take the aduantage of opportunitie (with good viſages you may be ſuer), and had purpoſely lyne in waite to climbe in Print, by the fall of their Seniours: like ambitious Planets, that enhaunſe their owne dignities, by the combuſtion, or retrogradation of their fellow-Planettes. Much good may that aduauncement doe them; and many daintie webbs may I ſee of thoſe fine Spiders: but although I dote vpon curious workemanſhip, yet I looue not artificiall poyſon; and am almoſt angrie with the trimmeſt Spinners, when they extort venom out of flowers, and will needes defile their friends Libraries with thoſe encroching cobwebbs. I wis it were purer Euphuiſme, to winne hoony out-of the thiſtle; to ſweeten Alöe with ſugar; to perfume the ſtinking Sagapenum with muſke; and to mitigate the heat of Euforbium with the iuice of the lilly. Tuſh, you are a ſilly humanitian of the old world: that was the ſimplicitie of the age, that loued frendſhip, more then gold, & eſteemed euery thing fine, that was neat, & holeſom: all was pure, that was ſeaſoned with a little ſalt; & all trimme, that was beſprinkled with a fewe flowers: now the

Digitized by Google

fierceſt Gunpouder, and the rankeſt pike ſawce, are / the braueſt figures of Rhetorique *in eſſe* ; and he the onely man at the Scriueners Piſtoll, that will *ſo inceſſantlie haunt the Ciuilian, and Deuine, that to auoide the hoat chaſe of his fierie quill, they ſhalbe conſtrained to enſconſe themſelues in an old Vrinall caſe.* Giue me ſuch a *Bonifacius.* Now well-worth ſome termes of *Aqua fortis* at a pinch : and wellcome Vrinall caſe, a fit ſconſe for ſuch valiant termes ; and a meet Bulwarke againſt that fierie quill. I haue already felt his pulſe : and cannot well caſt his water, without an Vrinall either old, or new : but an old Vrinall will not ſo handſomly ſerue the turne : it would be as new, as the Capcaſe of Straunge Newes : but *a pure mirrour* of an impure ſtale ; *neither groſe,* the clearer to repreſent a groſe ſubſtãce ; *nor green,* the liuelyer to expreſſe ſome greene colours, & other wanton accidents ; *nor any way a harlot,* the trulyer to diſcoouer the ſtate of a harlatrie. I haue ſeene as hoat an Agent made a tame Patient ; and gladd to enſconſe the dregges of his ſhame in an old Vrinall. It is a blabb : but not euery mans blabb, that caſteth a ſheepes-eye out of a Calues-head ; but a blabb with iudgement ; but a blabb, that can make excrements bluſh, and teach Chawcer to retell a Canterbury Tale. But ſuch great Iudicials requier ſome little

Digitized by Google

ſtuddie: and S. Fame is diſpoſed to make it Hallyday. She hath already put-on her wiſpen garland ouer her powting Croſ-cloth: and behold with what an Imperiall Maieſtie ſhe commeth riding in the ducking-chariot of her Triumphe. I was neuer ſo ſicke of the milt, but I could laugh at him, that would ſeeme a merry man, & cannot for his life keepe-in the breath of a fumiſh foole. Phy, long Megg of Weſtminſter would haue bene aſhamed to diſgrace her Sonday bonet with her Satterday witt. She knew ſome rules of Decorum: and although ſhe were a luſtie bounſing rampe, ſome / what like Gallemella, or maide Marian, yet was ſhe not ſuch a roiniſh rannell, or ſuch a diſſolute gillian-flurtes, as this wainſcot-faced Tomboy; that will needes be Danters Maulkin, and the onely hagge of the Preſſe. I was not wont to endight in this ſtile: but for terming his fellow Greene, as he was notoriouſly knowen, the Scriuener of Croſbiters; the founder of vgly othes, the greene maſter of the blacke art; the mocker of the ſimple world, *et cætera*: ſee, how the daggletaild rampalion buſtleth for the frank-tenement of the dunghill. I confeſſe, I neuer knew my Inuectiue Principles, or confuting termes before: and perhaps ſome better Schollars are nigh-hand as farre to ſeeke in the kinde rudiments, and proper phraſes of

Digitized by Google

pure Naſherie. *Why, thou errant Butter whore,* (quoth he, or rather ſhe) *thou Cotqueane and ſcrattop of ſcolds, wilt thou neuer leaue afflicting a dead carcaſſe, continually read the Rethorique Lecture of Ramme ally? A wiſp, a wiſp, a wiſp, ripp, ripp you kitchinſtuffe wrangler.* Holla Sir, ſweeter wordes would do no harme. Doubtleſſe theſe emphaticall termes of the ally, were layd aſteepe for ſome other acquaintãce, not for me: (good fellowes muſt be furniſhed with Oratorie, meete for their cõpany): but it is ſome mens euill lucke, to ſtũble in the way, when Will Summers weapon is ready drawen: and yet more poſſible for him to ſtay the ſwing of his eger hand, then for Maulkin to ſtay the dint of her moodie tongue; that can teach the Storme-winde to ſcould Engliſh; and pleadeth naturall poſſeſſion of the Cuckingſtoole. It is good pollicie, to yeeld to the furie of the tempeſt: (the reſoluteſt harts are fayne to yeeld to the imperious Iuriſdiction of Stormes, and Shrewes): and the ſtamping feind, in the Hoat-houſe of her foming Oratorie, will haue the laſt word. Sweet Goſſip, diſquiet not your loouely ſelfe:/ the dunghill, is your freehold; and the Cuckingſtoole, your Copyhold: I know none ſo rank-minded, to enter vpon your proper poſſeſſions by riot: and in caſe thou wilt needes alſo, be the Schoolemiſtris of

Digitized by Google

Ramme-ally, certainly thou deſireſt but thy right; that canſt read a Rhetorique, or Logique Lecture to Hecuba in the Art of rauing, and inſtruct Tiſiphone herſelfe in her owne gnaſhing language. Other He- or She-drabs, of the curſteſt, or vengeableſt rankes, are but dipped, or dyed in the Art: not ſuch a Belldam in the whole kingdome of Frogges, as thy croking, and moſt clamorous Selfe. Euen Martins Vnbrideled ſtile, and Paphatchets reaſtie eloquence, is but a curtaild iade to thy long taild Colt. Let the Clocke ſtrike: I haue loſt more howers; and looſe nothing, if I finde Equitie. Should the Butterwhore, beſturre herſelfe like an arrant Knight, and try all the concluſions of her cherne, ſhe might peraduenture in ſome ſort pay thee home with Schoolebutter: but vndoubtedly ſhe ſhould haue much adooe, to ſtoppe thy Ouen-mouth with a lidde of Butter, thou haſt ſwapped-downe a pounde of Butter at a peece of a Breakefaſt, or elſe there be lyes; and art ſuch a Witch for a cherne, or a cheeſe-preſſe, as is not to be founde in the Mallet of Witches, or in Monſieur Bodines Dæmonomania. Three meales of a Lazarello, make the fourth a Woolner: and it is a crauen frying-pan, that is affrayd of a Butter whore. No, no; the butter whore is thy bondmaide in a bunch of keyes: and take heede ſyrrha, the Cheeſeknaue be not her

Digitized by Google

bondmã in a loade of logges. She commeth not of the bloud of the threateners: but kitchin-ſtuffe, and a Cole-rake haue in times paſt bene of ſome familiar acquaintance; and it is a badd paier of Tonges, that cannot make as good ſport at a pinch, as a paier of Bellowes. Though a diſh / of buttered peaſe, be no great Warriour, yet a meſſe of buttered artichokes, may perhaps hold you ſome prettie tacke. Onely I barre thoſſame hourſonne vnlawfull termes, ſteeped in ciſternes of Aqua fortis, and Gunpowder: and haue at you a gentle craſh; when it ſhall pleaſe the Vrinall, and the Dairy, to giue me leaue to play, with a butter-fly. I doe you the vttermoſt credit in the world, that am euer glad to ſeeke dilatorie excuſes, and to craue a terme *ad deliberandum.* The fortune of the field, with pike, or penne, is like the lucke of Nauigation, or the hap of marriage: and I looue not greatly, to chopp vpon maine-chaunces. Nothing Venture, nothing looſe; none of the worſt rules, or cautels for their ſecuritie, that can tell Storyes of hap-hazard; and haue knowen ſome gallants more hardie, then wiſe. Humanitie is deſirous of Peace with the beſt, and of truce with the worſt: and truly I neuer longed to fight it out with flat ſtrokes, Vntil I muſt needleſly needes: but if there be no remedy by treatie, or amicable compoſition, although I was euer a

Digitized by Google

ſloweworme in the Morning, yet I cannot abide to go to bedd with a Dromedarie. I cannot maruell enough, how the nimble Bee ſhould be ingendred of the ſluggiſh Oxe, or the liuely waſpe of the dead horſe: but Nature is a miraculous, and omnipotent workeman; and I finde it true by Experience, that I muſt learne to imitate by Example, or preiudice miſelfe by fauouring other. To preiudice, were a ſmall matter, where the partie leuelleth at no great matter: but whē a mans credit is aſſaulted with bugges-wordes, and his witt beleaguered with the euer-playing ſhott of the Preſſe; Wiſedome muſt pardon him, whom Follie aſſaileth; and Humanitie diſpenſe with a neceſſary Apologie. I would I might make it a Pollicie, to make my aduerſarie much, and much, and much better / then he is: that I might re-encounter him with the more reputation, or the leſſe diſparagement: but it is his glory, to ſhame himſelfe notorioufly, and he will needes proclaime his owne vanities in a thouſand ſentences, and whole Volumes of ribaldry; not to be read but vpon a muck-hill, or in the priuyeſt priuie of the Bordello. Let his Vices ſleepe on a downe pillow: would, I could awaken his Vertues; and ſtopp their mouthes, that wiſh me in ſober earneſt, not to ſoile my hands vpon ſuch a contemptible raſcall;

Digitized by Google

but to let the reckles Villain play with his own ſhaddow: (Truth is my witneſſe, diuers honeſt men of good reckoning, and ſundry worſhipfull Gentlemen, haue aduiſed me in thoſe very termes expreſly): but ſithence I cã doe him no good by perſwaſion, it were follie to ſuffer him to do me harme by detraction. You that are not aſcertained of the lewd, and vile diſpoſition of the man, imagin as fauorably of him, as Charitie can poſſibly conceiue of an impudent Railer, and a prophane mouth: but you, that can ſkill of learning, and looue Schollerſhip, giue him his deſert; do Equitie right, and him no wrong, that wrongeth whom he liſteth. They that haue leyſure, to caſt-away, (who hath not ſome idle howers to looſe?) may peruſe his guegawes with indifferency: and finde no Art, but Euphuiſme; no witt, but Tarletoniſme; no honeſty, but pure Scogginiſme; no Religion, but preciſe Marlowiſme; no conſideration, but meere Naſhery: in briefe, no ſubſtance, but light feathers; no accidents, but lighter colours; no tranſcendents, but lighteſt phantaſies that ſty abooue the higheſt region of the cloudes, and purpoſe to haue a ſaying to the man in the Moone. His mountaines of Imagination, are too-apparent: his deſignements of Vanitie, too-viſible: his plots of Ribaldry, too-palpable: his formes of / libelling, too-outragious: S. Fame,

Digitized by Google

the goddeſſe of his deuotion: S. Blaſe, the idoll of his Zeale: S. Awdry, the lady of his loue: and the young Vicar of old S. Fooles, his ghoſtly Father. I haue heard of many notable prowde fooles: read of many egregious aſpiring fooles: ſeene many hautie vayneglorious fooles: woondred at manie buſie tumultuous fooles: but neuer ſuch a famous arrogant conceited foole, the very tranſcendent foole of the Ship; that hugely contemneth all the world, but his owne Flim-flams; and againſt all Pollicie, maketh his aduerſary more then an Aſſe, and leſſe then nothing; whoſe victory otherwiſe mought peraduenture haue ſeemed ſomething. But to ouer-crow an Aſſe, is a ſory Conqueſt; and a miſerable Trophy for ſo douty a Squier. There were wayes enough of aunſwearing, or confuting, with varietie, and reaſon; to his owne credite, the ſatisfaction of other, and my contentment: although hee had not deſperately, and ſcurrilouſly broken-out into the fowleſt and filthieſt ſcurfe of odious termes, that Villany could inuent, or Impudency vtter. Iwis hee mought haue ſpied a difference, betweene ſtaring, and ſtarke-blinde; betwene raging, and ſtarke-madd; betweene confuting, and rancke rayling in the groſſeſt ſort. Had hee ſeaſoned his ſtile with the leaſt ſpice of diſcretion, or tempered his vnmeaſurable licentiouſneſſe with any

Digitized by Google

moderation in the world; or hadd hee not moſt arrantly laboured, to ſhew himſelfe the very braſen forhead of Impudency, and the iron mouth of Maledictiõn, without all reſpect; he mought eaſily haue found me the calmeſt, and tractableſt aduerſary, that euer he prouoked; as reaſonable for him, as for miſelfe, in cauſes of Equity; and as partiall to foe, as to freend, in controuerſies of Trueth. But it is the topp-gallant of his braueſt brauure, to be / a Creator of Aſſes, a Confuter of Aſſes, and a Conquerour of Aſſes: Aſſes are borne to beare; and Birdes to ſoare aloft. No winges, to the winges of Self-conceit; nor any ſailes, to the ſailes of wordes: but hagard winges are ſometimes clipped; and hoiſed ſayles often-tymes humbled. Wordes amoũt, like Caſtels of vapours, or pillars of ſmoke, that make a mighty ſhowe in the Aier, and ſtraight Vaniſh-away. Howbeit Enuie, is a ſoking Regiſter: and Spite, a Remembrancer of truſt. That would be written in a glaſſe of wine, is otherwhiles founde in tables of marble, and indentures of wainescot. The Oeſtridge can deuoure the ruſt of Iron; and the gall of preſent Obloquy may be brucked: but the note-booke of malice, is a monumẽt of Tuch-ſtone; and the memoriall of Feude, the clawe of an Adamant. Pride ſwelleth in the penne of arrogancy: Vanitie bubleth in the mouth of folly:

Digitized by Google

Rancour boileth in the hart of Vengeance: mifchief hammereth in the head of Villany: and no fuch Art memoratiue, as a Crabtree defke. But in contempt of Pride, I will fpeake one prowde word: Vaine Nafh, whom all pofterity fhall call vaine Nafh, were thou the wifeft man in England, thou wouldeft not; or were thou the valianteft man in England, thou durft not haue written, as thou haft defperatly written, according to thy greene witt: but thou art the boldeft bayard in Print; a hare-braind foole in thy head; a vile fwad in thy hart; a fowle lyer in thy throate; and a vaine-glorious Affe in thy pen: as I will prooue vpon the carkaffe of thy wit, and courage, through-out all the Predicaments of proofe. I hate malice in mifelfe: but looue not to be an Vpholfter of ftuffed, and bombafted malice in other. And bicaufe thou termeft me an old Fencer; (indeede I was once Tom Burleys Schollar); and needeft difpling, afmuch as any rake-hell / in England: Wherefoeuer I meete thee next, after my firft knowledge of thy perfon, (not for mine owne reuēge, but for thy correction) I will make thee a fimple foole, and a double fwad, afwell with my hand, as with my tongue; & will engraue fuch an Epitaph, with fuch a Kyrieelefon vpon thy fcull, as fhall make thee remembred, when Syr Gawins

Digitized by Google

ſcull ſhall be forgotten. Some bibber of Helicon, will deeme it worth eternall record. And if thou entreate me not the fayrer, (hope of amendment preuenteth many ruines), truſt me, I will batter thy carrion to dirt, whence thou camſt; and ſquiſe thy braine to ſniuell, whereof it was curdled: na, before I leaue poudring thee, I will make ſweare, thy father was a Rope maker; and proclaime thiſelfe, the baſeſt drudge of the Preſſe; with ſuch a ſtraunge Confutation of thine owne ſtraunge Newes, as ſhall bring Sir Vainglory on his knees, and make Maſter Impudency bluſh, like a Virgin. Thy witt already maketh buttons: but I muſt haue S. Fame diſclaime her blacke *Sanctus*; and Naſhes deuout Supplication to God, to forgiue Pierces reprobate Supplication to the Diuell. It muſt be roundly done: or I will with a charme for a full ſtomacke, make the gorge of thy belching Rhetorique, & the paũch of thy ſurfetting Poetry, fling figures vpward, and downeward. Phy, what neede that be ſpoken? True: there is choice enough of ſweeter flowers; & neat Oratory interteineth neateſt Ciuilitie; (what reliſh ſo pleaſant, as the breath of Suada; or what ſmell ſo aromaticall, as the voyce of the Muſes?) but the mouth of a rude Aſſe, can taſt no other lettice; and the ſpawne of a beaſtly dogfiſh, will vnderſtand no other language but his owne. Fury

Digitized by Google

muſt be tamed with Fury, according to Homer, that teacheth the God of the field to ſtrike home; obſtinacy awed with obſtinacy; force maſtred with force; threatnings cooled with threatnings; contempt aunſweared in his owne toungue: and ſeeing the wild Colt is ſo vnreaſonably luſty, I meane percaſe either to make his courage crowch forward, or his Art winch backward. I haue twentie and twentie charmes, for the breaking of ſtubborne iades, for the biting of mad dogges, for the ſtinging of Scorpiõs, for the darting of Vrchins, for the haunting of ſprites, for the ſtorming of tempeſtes, for the blaſing of lightning, for the ratling of thunder, and ſo forth; euen for the craking of an hundred Pap-hatchets, or a thouſand Greenes, or ten thouſand Naſhes Peagooſes. And in caſe all happen to faile, (for it muſt be a mighty Exorciſme, that can coniure-downe Spite) I haue a *Probatum eſt*, of a rare and powerable vertue, that will hold the noſe of his, or his conceit to the grindſtone; and make gentle Villanie confeſſe, all the ſhreddes, and ragges of his ſlaſhingeſt termes, are worne to the ſtumpes. The deſperate foole may clawbacke himſelfe awhile: but it is poſſible, he may ſoone finde by ſounde Experience; He brayeth open warre againſt him, that can bray the Aſſe-drumme in a morter; & ſtampe his Iewes-trumpe to Pinduſt. Tom

Digitized by Google

Drumme, reconcile thiſelfe with a Counter-ſuppli· cation: or ſuerly, it is fatally done; and thy S. Fame vtterly vndone world without end. As ſauory a Sainct, by the verdict of that excellent Gentlewoman, as the cleanely diſburſing of the dirtpurſe of Sir Gargantua, that made King Charlemaine, and his worthy Chiualry, laugh ſo mightily, that their heads aked eight dayes after. A meet Idoll for ſuch a Beadman. I haue digreſſed from my purpoſe, and wandred out-of my accuſtomed way: but when the buttermilke goeth on Pilgrimage, you muſt giue the butter-whore leaue to play the arrant knight a craſh, and to make it ganging weeke for once. / Ganging weeke? na, a ganging day, I trow, is a large allowance; and enough to betire a poore ſtragling wench for all her bragges. Neuer ſory laſſe ſo pittifully aweary of her ragged petticote, and dagled taile; the tattered liuery of the confuting Gentleman. Let it go; and the wiſpe go with it. I honour the meekeſt Humility; but ſcorne the inſolenteſt Arrogancy vnder my foote; and ſay to the higheſt Imagination of Vanity, Thou art a proude Fopp. When thou carrieſt thy witt loftieſt, and prankeſt-vpp thy ſelfe-looue in his gawdieſt colours, thou art but an Aſſes head, and a Peacockes taile. Looue other; and thou mayſt be looued of other for pure Charity: hate

Digitized by Google

other, and thou art one of the moſt odious paddes in the world : a Turke, for M. Aſchams Archers to ſhoote-at ; and a Iewes eye, for Chriſtian needles. Now a little breathing pawſe will do no harme.

Were not Malice as wilfull in maintaining abuſe, as raſh in offering the ſame ; & Arrogancy as obſtinate in the Concluſion, as violent in the Premiſſes : I readily could, & willingly would vndertake a more temperate, and pleaſing courſe : but the faireſt offer is fowly contemned; the gentleſt ſuite vnkindly repulſed; ſay I, what I can, malice wilbe itſelfe ; or do I, what I can, Arrogancy wilbe itſelfe: and no other impreſſion can ſinke into the hart of Spite, or the eare of Pride, but inſtigations of Spite, or ſuggeſtions of pride. Other motiues, are meere ſimplicities: and euery treaty of pacification, or parly of reconciliation, the ſhaking of an aſpen leafe. The Diuels Oratour, is an Heralde of warre, not a Legate of Peace: and his Dammes Poet, the rankeſt challēger at ſhort, or long, that euer ſent defiance in white, or blacke. To refuſe the tryall, would in the common opinion ſeeme a ſhame; to accept the offer, in the beſt iudgements / is a ſhame : to take the foile, were a diſcredit; to giue the foile, is no credit. A hard caſe, where Patience may be ſuppoſed ſimple, and auengement will be

Digitized by Google

reputed vnwiſe; where I cannot hold my peace without warre vpon warre, nor ſpeake without blame vpon blame; where I muſt either be a paſſiue, or an actiue Aſſe in Print. I ſtand not vpon the point of honour, or vpon termes of reputation: but as it is a glory for the inferiour, to offer the combat, like the Chãpion of prowes, or the Duelliſt of courage; ſo I would the ſuperiour might refuſe that without preiudice, which he cannot vndertake without diſparagement, or performe without obloquie. To ſpoile Pierce Penniles, were a poore booty: and to make Thomas Naſh kiſſe the rod (by her fauour, that hath pleaſurably made him a *Sultã Tomũboius*, & another *Almãnus Hercules*, the great Captaine of the Boyes) were as ſory a victory; but only in her *Bello Euboico*, or in her main-battaile of Scouldes. Yet ſeeing he prouoketh me ſo malapertly hand to hand; & ſeeing the infancy of his fancy will not otherwiſe be weaned from his cranke cõceit: better ſuch a victory with ſome inconuenience, (for I hope, I may without arrogancy preſume of the victory) then continuall diſturbance with more and more miſchief. Hector neuer raged amongſt the Grecians, nor Achilles amongſt the Troians; as Meridarpax, the moſt furious, and thriſe-redoubted Captaine of the miſe, ruſhed vpon the wofull frogges, in that Heroicall battaile. But

Digitized by Google

Meridarpax himſelfe in his Impetuous, and maſſacrous ſallyes, neuer made ſuch a hauock of the miſerable frogges: as this Swaſh-pen would make of all Engliſh writers, howſoeuer garniſhed with eloquence, or ſtored with matter, might he be ſuffred to hewe them downe, like ſtockes, or ſhrubbes, without cõtrowlement. He will ſoone be ripe, that already giueth ſo luſty / onſets; & threateneth ſuch deſperate maine carreers, as ſurpaſſe the fierceſt Caualcads of *Bellerophon*, or *Don Alonſo d'Aualos*. Nothing curtaileth the courage of his brauery, or daunteth the ſwelling chiualry in his noſtrels, but that excellent learning is not eſteemed, as it deſerueth: nor ſingular men aduaunced, according to the merites of their worthineſſe. Might Penniles, ſingular Penniles, be the Preferrer of his owne Vertue, or Iudge of his owne cauſe; (as he couragiouſly contendeth): I beleeue, a Veluet coate were ſcantly good enough for his wearing, that now remaineth moſt humbly, and thriſe-affectionately bounden to the Right-honorable Printing-houſe, for his poore ſhifts of apparell, and his rich capp of maintenaunce. An Anatome of the Minde, and Fortune, were reſpectiuely as behoouefull and neceſſary, as an Anatomie of the Body: but this Captain-Confuter, (like gallant Lobbellinus in a new liuery) neither knoweth himſelfe, nor other: yet preſumeth he

Digitized by Google

knoweth all things, with an ouerplus of ſomwhat more, in knowing his Railing Grammar, his Rauing Poetry, his Roiſting Rhetorique, and his Chopping Logique: with whoſe helpe, he hath thwitled the milpoſt of his huge, and omnipotent conceit, to a pudding-pricke of Straunge Newes. Straunge newes indeede, that Pierce Penileſſe ſhould create more Aſſes in an hower; then the braue king of Fraunce, (now the mightieſt Warriour in Chriſtendome, and a great aduauncer of valour,) hath dubbed Knightes in his raigne. *The Ironyes* of Socrates, Ariſtophanes, Epicharmus, Lucian, are *but Carterly deriſions*: the Ironyes of Tully, Quintilian, Petrarch, Pontane, Sanazarius, King Alphonſus, but the ſory *Ieſtes of the Counſell-table Aſſe, Richard Clarke*: the Ironyes of Eraſmus in his prayſe of Folly; of Agrippa in his diſprayſe of Sciences; of Cardan / in his Apology of Nero, like Iſocrates commendation of Buſiris, or Lucians defence of Phalaris the Tyrant, but *Good Beare bite not*: the Ironyes of Sir Thomas More in his Vtopia, Poemes, Letters, and other writings; or of any their Imitatours at occaſion, but the *girdes of euery milke-maide*. They were ſilly country fellowes that commended the Bald pate, the Feauer quartane; the fly, the flea, the gnat, the ſparrow, the wren, the gooſe, the aſſe; flattery, hypocriſie, cooſinage, bawdery, leachery, buggery, madneſſe

Digitized by Google

itſelfe. What Dunſe, or Sorboniſt cannot maintaine a Paradoxe? What Peſant cannot ſay to a glorious Soldiour? *Pulchrè me herculè dictum, & ſapienter:* or, *Lautè, lepidè, nihil ſupra:* or, *Regem elegantem narras:* or, a man is a man, though he haue but a hoſe vpon his head: or ſo forth. *No ſuch light payment Gabriell,* at Pierce Penniles, or Thomas Naſhes hand. They are rare, and dainty wittes, that can roundly call a man Aſſe at euery third word; and make not nice, to befoole him in good ſullen earneſt, that can ſtrangle the prowdeſt breath of their pennes, and meaneth to borrow a ſight of their giddieſt braines, for a perfect Anatome of Vanitie, and Folly. Though ſtrõg drinke fumeth, & Aqua fortis fretteth; yet I will not exchaunge my Milke-maides Irony, for his Draff-maides aſſery. It is not the firſt time, that I haue diſputed *de Vmbra Aſini*; and prooued the Fox, the finder; as wily a pigeon, as the cunning Goldſmith, that accuſed his neighbour, and condemned himſelfe. A melancholy boddy, is not the kindeſt nurſe for a chearely minde: (the Iouiall complexion is ſouerainly beholding to Nature): but I know not a finer transformation in Ouid, then the Metamorphoſis of dudgen earneſt into ſport; of harſh ſower into ſweet; of loſſe into gaine; of reproch into credit; of whatſoeuer badd occurrence into ſome / good. I was neuer of

Digitized by Google

ſplenetique, when I was moſt dumpiſh, but I could ſmile at a friſe ieſt, when the good man would be pleaſurable; and laugh at fuſtian earneſt, when the merry man would be ſurly. Straunge Newes wilbe as pleaſant as a Cricket, by Cattes panges: and where ſuch a Turlery-ginkes of conceit, or ſuch a gibbihorſe of paſtime, as Straunge Newes? But fillip him, or twitch him neuer ſo little; and not ſuch a powting waſpe in Ramme-ally, or ſuch a winching iade in Smithfield. Then, *Aſſe, and worſe then a Cumane Aſſe, and foole, and dolt, and idiot, and Dunſe, and Dorbell, and dodipoul, and Gibaltar, and Gamaliell Hobgoblin, and Gilgilis Hoberdehoy;* and all the ruſty-duſty ieſtes in a country, are too-little for his great Confutation, that is lineally deſcended *ab Equis ad Aſinos*; and taketh-on, like Hob-all-as, a ſtout king of the Saracens. When I am better grammered in the Accidents of his proper Idiotiſme, and growen into ſome more acquaintance with his confuting Dictionary; I may peraduenture conſter, and pierce the whole Alphabet of his ſweet Eloquẽce a little better; and make ſome farther triall of M. Aſchams double tranſlation, a pretty exerciſe in a fit ſubiect. Meanewhile I am glad, to ſee him ſwimme vpp to the beardleſſe chinne in a Sea of hoony, and ypocraſe, that ſo lately was plunged in a Gulfe of other liquor, and parlouſly daſhed

Digitized by Google

vpon the horrible Rocke of desperation. It is good, they say, to be merry, and wise.

Poggius was merry, and Panormitan wise: Marot was merry, and Bellay wise: Scoggin was merry, and the Lord Cromwell wise: Greene was merry, and Sir Cristopher Hatton wise: Nash is merry, and there be enough wise, though his mothers sonne be Pierce Penniles. Or if thou beist wise, or wouldest seeme no foole, beware of Casual/ties, & a new Attractiue. Thy toungue is a mighty Loadestone of Asses; and must do asmuch for thine owne naturall eares, as the Magnes doth for Iron. As good do it at-first, as at-last: and better voluntary confession with fauour, then enforced profession with more shamefull penance. *Balaams Asse* was wise, that would not run vpon the Angels sword: *Æsops Asse* no foole, that was gladd to fawne vpon his master, like a Dogge: *Lucians Asse*, albeit he could not fly, like the witch his hostisse, (whose miracles he thought to imitate, had not her gentle maide coosened him with a wrong boxe) yet could he Politiquely saue himselfe, please, or ease his masters, delight his mistrisses, shewe many artificiall feates, amaze the beholders, drinke the purest wine in Thessalonica, and finally eate roses, aswell as thistles: *Apulius Asse* was a pregnant Lucianist, a cunning Ape, a loouing worme, and (what

Digitized by Google

worthyer prayſe?) A golden Aſſe: *Machiauels Aſſe* of the ſame mettall, and a deepe Politician like his founder, could prouide for One, better then the Sparrow, or the Lilly: *Agrippas Aſſe*, a woonderfull compoũd, and (may I ſay?) a diuine beaſt, knew all things, like Salomon, and bore all burdens like Atlas. The great Library of king Ptolemy in Egipt, reported to haue bene repleniſhed with ſeuenty thouſand Volumes, not ſuch a Library of bookes, or ſuch, or ſuch an Vniuerſitie of Arts, & Sciences, as Agrippas Aſſe. They that reuerence the wondrous Prophecies of the Cumane Sibyll, Amalthea, the chiefeſt of the ten inſpired Sibylles; defende, or fauour the excellent qualities of the *Cumane Aſſe*; eſteemed by Varro, the moſt profitable ſeruant of that Country, and by Columella the moſt neceſſary Inſtrument of all Countryes. *Euery Aſſe* is naturally a well diſpoſed creature, and (as the learned Rabbines haue written) a mirrour of clemency, patience, abſtinence, / labour, conſtancy, and diuine wiſedome. No ſuch Schoolemaſter for a wild boy, or a raſh foole, as the ſober, and ſtayed Aſſe; the Countryman of the wiſe Apollo, and the ſeuen wiſe maſters.

Venerat & ſenior pando Silenus aſello. Silenus the tender foſter-father, and ſage tutour of the wanton and frolicke Bacchus, afterward how braue, and frutefull? What an Orientall worthy? What

Digitized by Google

an Indian Conquerour? What a feſtiuall God? When Priapus, the ſhameleſſe God of the garden, (ſo gentility called that leacherous Diuell) attempted to ſurpriſe Veſta ſleeping; what an honorable peece of ſeruice performed *the honeſt Aſſe*, that with his lowde braying detected that villanous aſſault? What heathen memoriall more ſhamefull to that infamous God, thē *the ſolemne Sacrifice of that famous beaſt*, celebrated by the Lampſacens, in reuengement, and reproche of that treaſonable enterpriſe? But what treaſon, like the treaſon of Politique Achitophell, and plauſible Abſolon, that moſt diſloyally, and deſperatly rebelled againſt the ſacred maieſtie of the moſt valorous, and incomparable worthy king, Dauid? And what reward, or aduauncement meeter for ſuch treaſon, then hanging? And who carried the wiſe Achitophel to hanging, but *his owne fooliſh Aſſe?* And who carried the deſperate Abſolon to hanging, but *his owne ſober mule?* What ſhould I ſurcharge your memory with more hiſtories attonce? He that remembreth the gouernement of Balaams Aſſe, Æſops Aſſe, Lucians Aſſe, Apuleius Aſſe, Machiauels Aſſe, Agrippas Aſſe; the Cumane Aſſe, the Rabbines Aſſe, Apollos Aſſe, the ſeuen Sages Aſſe, Silenus Aſſe, Priapus Aſſe, Achitophels Aſſe, and Abſolons mule; little needeth any other Tutour, or Counſellour. Some would preſume to

Digitized by Google

alledge the ſingular and peerleſſe example / of the Chriſtian Poet :

Ille viam oſtendit, vili qua vectus aſello

Rerum Opifex. Agrippa, Cardan, Trithemius, Eraſmus, and diuers other notable Schollars, affecting to ſhew the variety of their reading, and the omniſufficiēcie of their learning, haue bene boulder in quoting ſuch reuerend examples, vpon as light, or lighter occaſion; but humanitie muſt not be too-ſawcie with diuinitie: & enough is better then a Feaſt. Sweet Apuleius, when thou haſt wiped thy mouth with thine owne Aſſe-dung; and thine owne Tounge hath ſayd vnto thy Pen, Pen thou art an Aſſe: then fellow-aſſes may ſhake handes, and they clapp their hands that haue heard the Comedie of *Adelphi*, or the two Aſſes: a more notable Pageant, then the Interlude of the two Soſias, or the two Amphitryos, or the two Mendechmi, or the two Martin Guerras; or any ſuch famous Paire of the true perſon, and the counterfait. But Aſſes carry myſteries: and what a riddle is this? that the true man ſhould be the counterfait; and the falſe fellow the true Aſſe. Or what a Secret in Philoſophie ſhall I reueale, as vnto the ſonnes of the Art: when I tell you, Aſſes milke is reſtoratiue, good for the gowte, for the blouddie flixe, for the clearineſſe of the ſkinne: Aſſes bloud, good for the feauer lurdane: Aſſes fleſh ſodden,

Digitized by Google

good for the Leproſie : Aſſes liuer roſted, good for the falling ſickneſſe : Aſſes hooues burned to aſhes, good alſo for the ſame ſickneſſe, for the kinges euill, for woomen labouring with a dead burthen : Aſſes bones well-boiled, good againſt the empoiſonment of the ſea-hare : Aſſes ſtale, good for the raines of the backe, and a fine decoratiue to bewtifie the face by taking-of ſpottes, and blemiſhes : Aſſes dung, a ſweet noſegay to ſtaunch bloud, a ſouerain fumigation to expell a dead birth out / of the moothers woombe, and a faire emplaſter for a fowle mouth, as it might be for the mouth of Bawdery in ryme, or of Blaſphemie in proſe. No Homericall Machaon, or Podalirius, comparable to the right Aſſe; that teacheth the greateſt Empiriques, Spagiriques, Cabaliſts, Alchimiſtes, Magicians, and occult Philoſophers, to wrap vp their profoundeſt, and Vnreuealable myſteries in the thickeſt ſkinne, or rather in the cloſeſt intrals of an Aſſe. I would, ſome open-mouthed Libertines, and profeſſed Atheiſts had as deeply learned that cunning leſſon. Euen the dead carcaſſe of the Aſſe, ingendreth the flying Scarabe, or ſoaring Beetle, the noble and Vnreconcileable feudiſt of the Ægle : of whom my braue aduerſary, the famouſeſt dor-beetle of this age, hath learned to contemne, and depraue the two mounting Ægles of the heauēly art of Poetry, Buchanan

Digitized by Google

in Latin Verſe, and Bartas in French meeter: Whoſe groſe imperfections he hath alſo vowed to publiſh, with an irrefragable Confutation of Beza, and our flooriſhingeſt New-writers, aſwell in diuinitie, as in humanitie; onely diuine Aretine excepted. But no thunderblaſing affrighteth, or toucheth the right Ægle: and the leaſt feather of the right Ægle, can ſoone deuoure the baſtard winges of other enuious, and quarrelous birdes. What carrion Aſſe was the Sire of this vnappeaſble Scarabe: or what Scarabe ſhalbe the ſonne and heire of this carrion Aſſe; I leaue it wholy to the diſcourſe of the learned Ægles, that were euer moleſted with the buzzing flye, and ſhall euer be haunted with the braying Beaſt. I muſt ſpin-vp my taſke. And bicauſe the wild-aſſe wanteth a picker-deuant, let him drinke his owne Vrine, tempered with Spicknard, as he carouſeth Helicon; and according to the tradition of Vitalis de Furno, it will procure, and encreaſe haire; as kindly, / as the Artificiall liniment of Doctour Leuinus Lemnius for a comely Beard. And in-caſe he feareth his fellow Greenes fluttiſh diſeaſe, let him read the naturall hiſtories of the Aſſe, and the Sheepe, in Ariſtotle, Pliny, or Geſner; and he ſhall finde it one of their ſpeciall Priuiledges, to be arreſted from the arreſt of the ſix footed Sergeant, a continuall haunter

Digitized by Google

of other hairy beaſtes, and onely fauorable to the good Aſſe, and the gentle Sheepe. Or if haply he would be ſhod with a paire of euerlaſting ſhooes, like the talaria of Mercury, (for alas that any Gentleman of worth, or correctour of the Lord du Bartas, ſhould lye in the Counter in his bootes for want of ſhooes); Albertus, and Cardan will teach him to make incorruptible ſhooes of the durableſt part of an aſſes hide, immortall leather. And ô ſweet Muſes of Parnaſſus, are not the ſweeteſt pipes, and pleaſanteſt inſtruments made of Aſſes bones? or do not the ſkillfull Geographers, Strabo, and Pliny, call dainty Arcadia in Peloponeſus, (the natiue country of the great Apollo) *the Land of Aſſes?* Was not the renowned Pan, the Politique Captaine of the cõquerous Bacchus, & a ſuppoſed God in the Painim world, an Arcadian Aſſe? Was not Prince Arcas, the braue ſonne of king Iupiter, after his death honored with the glorious memoriall of the *Great Beare* in heauen, an Arcadian Aſſe? Was not the *Little Beare*, his moother Caliſto, an Arcadian Aſſe? Was not her father, the drad Tyrant, Lycaon, an Arcadian Fox, an Arcadian Woolfe, an Arcadian Aſſe? Was not the mighty Atlas, the father of Maia, and grandfather of Mercury, an Arcadian Aſſe? Was not Mercury himſelfe, the moſt-nimble, and ſupereloquent God, an

Digitized by Google

Arcadian Aſſe? Was not Aſtrophill, excellent Aſtrophill, (an other Mercury at all dexterities, and how delitious a Planet of heauenly harmony,) / by his owne adoption, an Arcadian Aſſe? Hiſtories are no ſnudges in matters of note: and aſſes had neuer leſſe cauſe to be aſhamed of aſſes. When wiſe Apollo, when Valorous Pan, when employable Mercury, when ſurmounting Atlas, when the *Great*, and *Little Beare* of heauen, when excellent Aſtrophil, glory in the honorable title of Arcadian Aſſes, who would not coouet to be recoonted in that memorable Catalogue? What generous, or noble Antiquitie, may wage compariſon with Statius Arcadians, *Aſtris, Lunaque priores.* Sweetneſſe itſelfe was the daughter and darling of Arcadia: and Arcadia the mother, the nurſe, the dug, the ſweet-hart of Sweetneſſe itſelfe. O the ſugarcandy of the delicate bag pipe there: and ô the licoriſe of the diuine dulcimers there. No maruell though his Muſique be ſweeter, and ſweeter, that is as fine an *Aſinus ad lyram*, as the famous Diſciple of the worthy Ammonius; and hath Greenes melliſluous Arcadia at his fingers endes, the very funerall of the Counteſſe of Pembrookes Arcadia. His other habiliments, and complements be innumerable: and I know not an Aſſe, but hath ſome good quality, that is, ſome ſpeciall propertie of an Aſſe, either proffitable for commodity, or pleaſurable

Digitized by Google

for delight, as an Aſſe may be proffitable, or pleaſurable either ſimply, or in ſome reſpect. It was not for nothing, that the braueſt king, that euer raigned vpon Earth, Alexander the Great, euen greater then any Mars, or Iupiter, that euer brandiſhed ſcepter in the world; in his Royall and Valorous iudgment preferred the Aſſe before the man, when being ſolemnely commaunded by Oracle, to ſley the firſt liuing Creature he ſhould fortune to meete withall, if after his puiſſant, and conquerous manner he would that day obtaine the Victory; he happened to meete a good honeſt Coun / try-man, riding vpon an Aſſe; whoſe preſent ſacrifice, as a moſt acceptable Oblation, made him Victorious. Leſſe maruell of the Archbiſhops aunſwere, in *menſa Philoſophica*, and Pontans Dialogues, that hauing reuerently, and deuoutly Preached on Palme Sonday, of the She-Aſſe, whereupon Chriſt in humility voutſafed to ride; and after his lowly Sermon mounting vpon his lofty palfry, was riding his way; ſomewhat fatherly and gratiouſly ſtayed awhile, to heare the old woomans ſuite, that came haſtely running towardes him, and boldly taking his horſe by the bridle; now I beſeech your Grace, quoth ſhe, is this the She-Aſſe whereupon Chriſt in humility rode? No, moother, quoth he, but a poore fole of that rich Aſſe, and I a humble ſeruant of

Digitized by Google

that high Lord. Good enough, quoth the wooman, I knew not before that the gentle She-Aſſe your Grace Preached of, had ſuch goodly foles: yes, mother, quoth the Biſhop, and a great deale goodlier, then mine: and ſo departed, leauing behind him an euerlaſting memory of that deuout Sermon, and that weighty Communication with the wooman, in honour of the Aſſe, a frutefull parent of many goodly and pompous foles. I will not trouble Boccace, or Poggius for Tales. He was a naturall foole, that would have giuen his liuery againe vnto his Lord, bicauſe it was embrodered with Aſſes heades, which made a comely ſhowe vpon his garment, and mought ful-well haue beſeemed ſome richer coates. Could the mill, the plough, the packe, the hamper, the paniar, the cloakebagge, the burden, the fardell, the bagge and baggage, the cudgell, the goade, penury, famine, patience, labour itſelfe ſpeake; all other Apologies were ſuperfluous: they would frame a ſubſtantiall and neceſſary defence of the Aſſe; and Experience would declame in commenda/tion of his perpetuall Exerciſe, trauaile, induſtry, Valour, temperance, ſufferance, magnanimity, and conſtancy, the honorableſt and inuincibleſt vertues in the world. The wiſeſt Oeconomy maketh eſpeciall account of three ſingular members; a marchants eare; a pigges mouth; and an Aſſes

Digitized by Google

backe. A ſhort note, but worth all Tuſſers, or Catos huſbandry. Had I more experience in ſome caſes, I could ſay more: & as my experiẽce in thoſe caſes may happen to encreaſe, or amount, I will not faile to tender my deuoire. I haue penned large Diſcourſes in prayſe of ſtuddy, meditation, conference, exerciſe, induſtry, vigilancy, & perſeuerance, the worthieſt thinges in the circuite of the Earth, (nothing vnder heauen, equiualent to labour) : and whatſoeuer I haue addreſſed in their behalfe, I may in ſort alledge in honour of the Aſſe ; and compile whole Volumes in his commendation, more auailable for commodity, and more neceſſary for Vſe, then the workes of ſome great Commenters in humanity, Philoſophy, hiſtory, and other higher Profeſſions. He that can kindly play the right Aſſe, in ignorance wil finde knowledge, in pouerty wealth, in diſpleaſure fauour, in ieoperdy ſecurity, in bondage freedome, in warre peace, in miſery felicity. Who ſo thoroughly prouided for both fortunes, as he: or who ſo ſtrongly armed againſt all caſualties, as he? or what Seneca, Epictetus, Boetius, Petrarch, or Cardan, ſo effectuall a Schoolemaſter of *Suſtine, et Abſtine*, as he? or who ſuch an Oeconomer to liue, as he: or who ſuch a Philoſopher to dye, as he? or what Phyſitian for the boddy, like him : or what Lawier for the ſubſtance, like him: or what Deuine for

Digitized by Google

the minde, like him? or where ſuch a Practitioner of Vertue as he: or where ſuch a Fortune-wright, as he? or finally where ſuch an apt ſubiect for the Ciuill, and morall refor / mation of the Prudent Auguſtus, the good Traian, the gentle Marcus Antoninus, the vertuous Alexãder Seuerus, the drad Septimius Seuerus, or any honorable Prince, or Politique Tyrant, that with a reuerẽd authoritie, would eſtabliſh Vertuous, and awfull orders of gouernement in his dominions?

But what an Aſſe am I, that proceede ſo coldly, and dully in the Apology of ſo worthy a Creature? What will you ſay, Gentlemen, if I can prooue with pregnant arguments, artificially drawen from all the places of Inuention, according to Ramus, Rodolphes, or Ariſtotles Logique; that the fire-breathing Oxen, and mighty Dragon, which kept the moſt-famous Golden Fleece, the glorious prize of braue Iaſon, were Aſſes of Colchos: that the watchfull, and dreadfull Dragon, which kept the goodly Golden Apples, in the Occidental Ilands of the Ocean, called Heſperides, one of the renowned prizes of dowty Hercules, was a Weſt-Indian Aſſe: that the golden-horned, and braſen-footed Menalian hart, the fierce Erymanthean Bore, the hideous birdes Stymphalides, the puiſſant Nemæan Lion, and the ſeuen-hedded Lernæan Hydra, which Hercules ſlew, were Aſſes of

Digitized by Google

Arcadia, and other adiacent countryes of Morea: (for Mænalus, and Erymanthus, were hilles in Arcadia, Stymphalus a lake in Arcadia, Nemæa a wood in Argolis, and Lerna a fen in Argolis, an other ſhire of Morea:) that the Serpent with the golden creaſt, which kept the rich fountaine of Mars in Greece, and was ſlaine of valiant Cadmus, was an Aſſe of Boëtia, ſo called *à boue*, where the Prophet Amphiaraus breathed Oracles: that the huge Serpent Python *de monte*, ingendred ſhortly after Deucalions deluge, which the Arcadian god of Wiſedome killed with his arrowes, the firſt founders of the / Pythian Games, was a mighty Aſſe of the mountaines: that the mounting Ægle, into which king Iupiter turned, not himſelfe, but Ganymedes, (whom he tooke with him, as his flying Page, and vſed as his ſtanding cupbearer) was a faithfull ſeruaunt, and a perpetuall Aſſe: that the hondred-eyed Argus, whom Queene Iuno appointed the keeper of Io, the faireſt creature of the Arcadian herde, and whom Mercury lullabyed aſleepe with a ſweet Syrinx, or Arcadian Pipe, (many Stratagemes, and myſteries in that Arcadian Pipe) was a blind Aſſe of Arcadia: I ſkip a thouſand memorable Hiſtories; that all they, by whatſoeuer noble, or glorious names intituled, that hauing charge of greateſt importance, and ineſtimable Value, committed to their vigilant and

Digitized by Google

ielous cuſtody, did attonce forgo their treaſure, their honour, and their life (as many great perſonages for want of circumſpection haue done) were notorious Arch-aſſes. If I cannot ſubſtantially prooue all this, and for a neede euict by neceſſary, and immediate demonſtration, that the great world is a great Aſſe, aſwell *actu*, as *Potentia*; and the Microcoſme, a little Aſſe, aſwell *habitu*, as *affectione*; ſay I am a notable Aſſe, aſwell *re*, as *nomine*. The Philoſopher, that ſeeking-about with a candle at high noone, could not finde a Man in a populous market; without a candle would ſoone haue pointed at a faire of Aſſes; and could quickly haue diſcouered a frutefull generation in euery element, in the water, on the Earth, about the fier, in the Aier. And the wiſe-man, that ſaid without exception, *Stultorum plena ſunt omnia;* might eaſely haue bene entreated, to haue ſet it downe for a ſouerain Maxim, or generall rule; *Aſinorum plena ſunt omnia.* The thundring Oratour Demoſthenes, was not affraide to taunt Minerua, the armed Goddeſſe of fine Athens, for exhibiting fauour to three / vnreaſonable beaſtes, the Owle, the Dragon, and the People: counting the People the moſt importunate and intolerable beaſt of the three, by whoſe appointment he was baniſhed the dainty Citty, the onely ſeate of his raigning Eloquence.

Digitized by Google

If the people of fine Athens, were ſuch a barbarous and ſenſeleſſe brute, as their excellenteſt Oratours, Philoſophers, Captaines, Counſellours, and Magiſtrates founde to their coſt: and if the people of braue Roome, the Lady, and Empreſſe of the world, were ſuch a bellowing beaſt of many heads, as Horace called it, Tully prooued it, Scipio fealt it, and Cæſar himſelfe rued it; what may be ſaid of other people? Flooriſhing Greece in many hundred yeares acknowledged but ſeuen wiſe-mē of ſpeciall note; as the auncient world acknowledged but ſeuen miracles, or magnificall ſpectacles worth the ſeeing: & Callimachus a ſweet Poet, recording the memorable, and woonderfull thinges of Peloponeſus, termed them Paradoxes. Vertuous Italy in a longer terme of dominion, with much adooe bred two Catos, and One Regulus: but how many Syluios, Porcios, Brutos, Beſtias, Tauros, Vitellios, Capras, Capellas, Aſinios, and ſo forth? Other ſingularities, meete matter for Tullyes Paradoxes. The world was neuer giuen to ſingularities: and no ſuch monſter, as Excellency. He that ſpeaketh, as other vſe to ſpeake, auoideth trouble: and he that doth, as moſt men doe, ſhalbe leaſt woondred at. The Oxe, and the Aſſe, are good fellowes: the Libbard and the Foxe, queint wiſardes: whatſoeuer is abooue the common capacity, or vſuall hability

Digitized by Google

a Paradoxe. I will not bethinke miſelfe of the rigorous ſentences of Stoicall Philoſophers, or the biting Apothegs of ſeditious Malcontents, or the angry ſayings of froward Saturniſtes, or the tumultuous Prouerbes of mutinous people: / (I haue ſmall affection to the reaſons, that are drawen from affection): but were not the world, an Vniuerſall Oxe, and man a generall Aſſe, how were it poſſible, that ſo many counterfait ſlightes, crafty conueiances, ſuttle Sophiſtications, wily cooſenages, cunning impoſtures, and deepe hypocriſies ſhould ouerflow all: ſo many opinions, Paradoxes, ſectes, ſciſmes, hereſies, apoſtacies, idolatries, Atheiſmes ſhould peſter the Church: ſo many fraudes, ſhiftes, colluſions, coouens, falſifications, ſubornations, treacheries, treaſons, factions, commotions, rebellions ſhould diſturbe the Commonwealth? It is a world to conſider, what a world of Follyes, and Villanies poſſeſſeth the world: onely bicauſe the world is a world, *id eſt*, an Aſſe. And would the Preſſe ſuffer this ſcribling Aſſe to dominere in Print, if it were not a Preſſe, *id eſt*, an Aſſe? Might it pleaſe his confuting Aſhip, by his fauorable permiſſion to ſuffer One to reſt quiet; he might with my good leaue be the graũd Generall of Aſſes, or raigne alone in his proper dominion, like the mighty Aſſyrian king, euẽ Phul Aſſar himſelfe, the famous ſon of the re-

Digitized by Google

nowned Phul Bullochus. For ſo the Gentlewooman hath intituled him in a place, or two, that hath vowed the Canonizatiõ of Naſhes S. Fame, in certaine Diſcourſes of regard, already diſpatched to my ſatisfaction, & almoſt accõpliſhed to her owne intention. It may peraduenture be his fortune, to leaue as glorious a nephew behinde him, as euer was the redoubted Lob-aſſar-duck, an other noble king of Aſſyria; not forgotten by the ſaid excellent Gentlewoman, but remembred with ſuch a grace, as bewtifieth diuine wittes. Kind-hart hath already offered faier for it, & were it not that the great Phul Aſſur himſelfe had foreſtalled and engroſed all the commodities of Aſſyria, with the whole encomium of Aſſes / into one hand; it ſhould haue gone very-hard, but this redoubted Lob-aſſar-duck would haue retailed, and regrated ſome precious part of the ſaid commodities, and aduauncements. He may haply in time by eſpeciall fauour, and approoued deſert, (what meanes of preferment, to eſpeciall fauour, and approoued deſert?) be interteined, as a chapman of choice, or employed as a factour of truſt; and haue ſome ſtables of Aſſes at his appointment, as may ſeeme meeteſt for his carriages, and conueiances. For mine owne part, I muſt be contented to remaine at his deuotion, that hath the whole generation of Aſſyrians at

Digitized by Google

commaundement; with a certaine perſonall priuiledge, or rather an Imperiall Prerogatiue, to create and inſtall Aſſes at pleaſure. Had I not lately reuiſited the Aſſyrian Hiſtory, with the ſaid vertuous Gentlewooman, one of the gallanteſt ornaments of her ſexe; I mought perchaunce haue omitted this ſmall parcell of his great honour, and left the commendation of the Aſſe more vnperfect: which notwithſtanding I muſt ſtill leaue moſt-vnperfect, in reſpect of his vnſpeakable beau-deſert. Vnto whom for a farewell, I cã wiſh no more, then accompliſhed honour; nor no leſſe, then athleticall health. A ſhort exhortation, will ſerue Socrates, to continue like himſelfe. A roach not ſounder then a haddocke, or the ſtockfiſh, that Pliny termeth *Aſellus*: & nothing ſo vn-kindly hurteth an Aſſe, as the two melancholy beaſtes, cold, and the drowſie ſickneſſe; the cauſe why Aſſes cãnot abide to inhabite the moſt-cold, & froſen territories of Scythia; but are glad to ſeeke their fortunes in other countryes, & to coloniſe in warmer ſeats. Blame him not, that ſayth; *The weather is cold, and I am wearie with confuting:* & in another place; *Had I my health, now I had leyſure to be merry: for I haue almoſt waſht my hands of the Doctour.* Now I / ſee thou art a good fellow by thine own cõfeſſion, & wilt not giue the Aſſes head for the waſhing: Cold,

Digitized by Google

and the drowſie ficknesse, are thy two mortall enemies: when they are fled the Country, like fugitiue, and diſmall birdes, let vs haue a flitch of mirth, with a fiddle of the pureſt Asse-bone: onely I barre the Cheeke-bone, for feare of Sampſons tune, more then heroicall. But the ſpring-tooth in the lawe, will do vs no harme, although it were a fountaine of Muſcadell, or a conduict of Ypocraſe. Many are the miracles of right Vertue: and he entreth an infinite Labyrinth, that goeth about to praiſe Hercules, or the Asse: whoſe Labours exceede the Labours of Hercules, and whoſe glory ſurmounteth the topp of Olympus. I were beſt to end, before I beginne; and to leaue the Autor of Asses, where I found the Asse of Autors. When I am better furniſhed with competent prouiſion, (what prouiſion ſufficient for ſo mighty a Prouince?) I may haply aſſay to fulfill the Prouerbe, by waſhing the Asses headd, and ſetting the crowne of higheſt praiſe vpon the crowne of young Apuleius, the heire apparant of the old Asse, the moſt glorious Olde Asse.

I haue written in all ſortes of humours priuatly I am perſwaded, more then any young man of my age in England. They be the wordes of his owne honorable mouth: and the golden Asse, in the ſuperabundãce of his rich humours, promiſeth

Digitized by Google

many other golden mountaines; but hath neuer a ſcrat of ſiluer. Had Ariſtophanes Plutus bene outwardly as liberall, as Greenes Mercury was inwardly prodigall, he muſt needes haue bene the onely Orientall Starre of this Language: and all other writers, old, or new, in proſe, or verſe, in one humour or other, but ſory Occidentall ſtarres. Onely externall defects, quoth himſelfe, are caſt in his diſh: for inter / nall graces, and excellenteſt perfections of an accompliſhed minde, who but he? Come diuine Poets, and ſweet Oratours, the ſiluer ſtreaming fountaines of flowingeſt witt, and ſhiningeſt Art: come Chawcer, and Spencer; More, and Cheeke; Aſcham, and Aſtely; Sidney, and Dier; come the deareſt ſiſter of the deareſt brother, the ſweeteſt daughter of the ſweeteſt Muſes, onely One excepted, the brighteſt Diamant of the richeſt Eloquence, onely One excepted, the reſplendenteſt mirrour of Feminine valour, onely One excepted; the Gentlewooman of Curteſie, the Lady of Vertue, the Counteſſe of Excellency, and the Madame of immortall Honour: come all the daintieſt dainties of this toungue, and doe homage to your Verticall Starre; that hath all the ſoueraine influences of the eloquent, and learned Conſtellations at a becke, and Paradiſeth the Earth with the ambroſiall dewes of his incomprehenſible witt. But what ſhould I dally with hoony-bees; or

Digitized by Google

preſume vpon the Patience of the gentleſt Spirites, that Engliſh Humanity affourdeth? Pardon me Excellent mindes: and I will here diſmiſſe my poore milkemaide, nothing appliant to the delicate humour of this minion Humoriſt, and Curteſan Secretary. Shall I ſay? Phy vpon arrant knauery, that hath neuer ſucked his fill of moſt-odious Malice: or, Out-vpon ſcurrilous, & obſcene Villany, nuſled in the booſome of filthieſt filth, and hugged in the armes of the abominableſt hagges of Hell. Be it nothing to haue railed vpon Doctours of the Vniuerſitie, or vpon Lords of the Court, (whō he abuſeth moſt-infamouſly, & abiecteth as cōtemptuouſly, as me): but what other deſperate varlet of the world, durſt ſo villanouſly haue diffamed Lōdon, & the Court, as he notoriouſly hath done in theſe raſcall termes? *Tell me, is there any place ſo lewde, as this Ladie London? / not a wenche ſooner creepes out of the ſhell, but ſhe is of the Religiō. The Court I dare not touch, but ſuerlie there be many falling Starres, and but one true Diana. Not a wenche*, a very Vniuerſall Propoſition, in ſo large, and honourable a Citty: and *but One*, a very ſhort Exception to a generall rule of the Court. Flooriſhing London, the Staple of Wealth, & Madame-towne of the Realme, *is there no place ſo lewde, as thy ſelfe?* and Noble Court, the Pallace of Honour, and Seate of

Digitized by Google

Maieſty, haſt thou *but one true Diana*? Is it not right-hand time, the young haddock were caught, that can already nibble ſo prettily? Was he, thinke you, lodged in Cappadocia, for ſleeping by the Sunne, and ſtudying by the Moone? Whom, or what, will not he ſhortly confute with an ouerrunning furie, that ſo brauely aduentureth vpon London, and the Court, all-attonce? Honour, regard thy good reputation; and ſtaunch the ranke bloud of this arrant Autor; as honeſt a man, as ſome honeſt wooman I could name, that keepeth her honeſty, as ſhe doth her Friday faſt. Suffer him to proceede, as he preſumeth, & to end, as he beginneth; and looke for a rarer beaſt in England, then a Woolfe; and a ſtraunger monſter in Print, then the diuine Ruffian, that intituled himſelfe, *Flagellum Principum*, and prooued *Peſtis Rerum publicarum*. My Toungue is an infant in his Idiotiſme; and I had rather bleſſe my peſtilenteſt enemy, then curſe any: but ſome little plaine dealing dooith not otherwhiles amiſſe, where nothing but flat, and rancke groſeneſſe blotteth the paper, infecteth the aier, deprauetb the good, encourageth the badd, corrupteth youth, accloieth age, and annoyeth the world. Good faith is my witneſſe, I neither affect to obſcure any light in an aduerſary; nor deſier to quench any honeſt courage in an enemy; but wiſh euery

Digitized by Google

gift of heauē, or/earth, of minde, or body, of nature, of fortune, redoubled in both, euen in the greeneſt aduerſary, and wildeſt enemy: in whom I honour the higheſt, and looue the loweſt degree of excellency: but am not eaſely cooſend by Imperfection, branded with the counterfait marke of perfection. I am ouer-ready to pardon young ouerſights, and forgiue inconſiderate offences: but cannot flatter Folly, or fawne vpon Vanity, or cocker Ignoraunce, or ſooth-vp Vntruth, or applaude to Arrogancy, either in foe, or frēd. It cōcerneth euery man to looke into his owne eſtate with his owne eyes: but the young man, that will neither know himſelfe, nor acknowledge other, muſt be told in brief, what the cōmon opinion reporteth at large. He hath little witt: leſſe learning: leſt iudgement: no diſcretion; Vanity enough: ſtomacke at will: ſuperabundance of ſelfe-conceit: outward liking to fewe, inward affection to none: (his defence of Greene, a more biting condemnation then my reproofe): no reuerence to his patrons: no reſpect to his ſuperiours: no regard to any, but in contemptuous, or cēſorius ſort: hatred, or diſdaine to the reſt: cōtinuall quarrels with one, or other: (not ſuch an other mutterer, or murmurer, euē againſt his familiareſt acquaintance): an euer-grudging, & repining mind: a rauenous throte: a gluttonous mawe: a drōken

Digitized by Google

head: a blaſphemous tongue: a fiſking witt: a ſhittle nature: a reuolting, and rennegate diſpoſition: a broking, and huckſtering penne: ſtore of raſcall phraſes: ſome little of a brabling Schollar: more of a rauing ſcould: moſt of a roiſterly ſeruing-man: nothing of a Gentleman: leſſe then nothing of a fine, or cleanly Artiſt. And as for termes of honeſty, or ciuility, (without which the ſharpeſt Inuention is Vnſauery, and the daintieſt elocution lothſome): they are Gibridge vnto him; and / he a Iewiſh Rabbin, or a Latin Dunſe with him, that vſeth any ſuch forme of monſtrous termes. Aretine, and the Diuels Oratour, would be aſhamed to be conuicted, or endighted of the leaſt reſpectiue, or ceremonious phraſe, but in mockage, or cooſenage. They neither feare Goodman Sathan, nor maſter Beelzebub, nor Sir Reuerence, nor milord Gouernement himſelfe: ô wretched Atheiſme, Hell but a ſcarecrow, and Heauen but a woonderclout in their doctrine: all vulgar, ſtale, and ſimple, that is not a note abooue Goddes-forbid. Whom durſt not he appeach, reuile, or blaſpheme, that forged the abominableſt booke in the world, *De tribus impoſtoribus mundi:* and whom will he forbeare, in any reaſon, or conſcience, that hath often proteſted in his familiar hauntes, to confute the worthy Lord du Bartas, and all the famouſeſt moderne-writers, ſauing him

Digitized by Google

onely, who onely meriteth to be confuted with vnquenchable Volumes of Heauen- and Hell-fier. Perionius deciphreth the fowle preceptes, and reprobate examples of his Morall Philoſophy, in an inuectiue Declamation, generally addreſſed vnto all the Princes of Chriſtendome, but eſpecially directed vnto the moſt-Chriſtian French king, Henry the Second. Agrippa deteſteth his monſtrous veneries, and execrable Sodomies. Cardan blaſoneth him the moſt-impudent Ribald, that euer tooke penne in hand. Manutius inueſteth him the Ring leader of the corrupteſt bawdes, and miſcreanteſt rakehells in Italy. His familiar acquaintance, Sanſouino, doth him neuer a whitt more creddit, then needeth. Taſſo diſdaineth his inſolent and inſupportable affectation of ſingularitie. Iouius in his Elogies voutſaueth him not the naming. Doubtleſſe he was indued with an exceeding-odd witt: and I neuer read a more ſurpaſſing-hyperbolicall / ſtile. Caſtilios Courtier after a pleaſurable ſort, graceth him with a deepe inſight in the higheſt Types and Idees of humane perfections, whereunto he moſt curiouſly, and inſatiably aſpired. His wanton diſciples, or Vain-conceited fauorites, (ſuch crowes, ſuch egges) in their fantaſticall Letters, and Bacchanall Sonnets, extoll him monſtrouſly, that is, abſurdly: as the onely Monarch of witt, that is, the Prodigall

Digitized by Google

ſonne of conceit; and the mortall God of all Vertue, that is, the immortall Diuell of all Vice. Oh, what grandiloquous Epithits, and ſupereminent Titles of incredible and prodigious excellency, haue they beſtowed vpon the Arch-miracle of the world, Signior Vnico? not ſo little as the huge Gargantua of proſe, and more then the heauen-ſurmounting Babell of Ryme. But what approoued man of learning, wiſedome, or iudgement, euer deigned him any honour of importance, or commēdation of note: but the young darling of S. Fame, Thomas Naſh, aliàs Pierce Penniles, the ſecond Leuiathan of Proſe, and an other Behemoth of ryme? He it is, that is borne, to glorifie Aretine, to diſgrace Bartas, and to vndooe me. Say I, write I, or dooe I, what I can, he will haunt, and trounce me perpetually, with ſpritiſh workes of Supererogation, inceſſant tormentours of the Ciuilian, and Deuine. Yet ſome-boddy was not woont to endight vpon aſpen leaues of paper: and take heede Sirrha, of the Fatall Quill, that ſcorneth the ſting of the buſie Bee, or the ſcratch of the kittiſh ſhrew. A Bee? a drone, a dorre, a dor-bettle, a dormouſe. A ſhrewe? a drab, a hag, a flibber-gibbet, a make-bate, the pickthanke of Vanity, the pickpocket of foolery, the pick-purſe of all the palteries, and knaueries in Print. She doth him no wrong, that doth him right, like

Digitized by Google

Aſtræa, and hath ſtiled him with an / immortal penne; the *Bawewawe* of Schollars, the *Tutt* of Gentlemen, the *Tee-heegh* of Gentlewomen, the *Phy* of Citizẽs, the *Blurt* of Courtiers, the *Poogh* of good Letters, the *Faph* of good manners, & the *whoop-hooe* of good boyes in Lõdon ſtreetes. Naſh, Naſh, Naſh, (quoth a louer of truth, and honeſty) vaine Naſh, railing Naſh, craking Naſh, bibbing Naſh, baggage Naſh, ſwaddiſh Naſh, rogiſh Naſh, Naſh the bellweather of the ſcribling flocke, the ſwiſh-ſwaſh of the preſſe, the bumm of Impudẽcy, the ſhambles of beaſtlines, the poulkat of Pouls-churchyard, the ſhrichowle of London, the toade-ſtoole of the Realme, the ſcorning-ſtocke of the world, & the horrible Cõfuter of foure Letters. Such an Antagoniſt hath Fortune allotted me, to purge melãcholy, and to thruſt me vpon the Stage: which I muſt now loade, like the old ſubiect of my new prayſe. There is no warring with Deſtiny: and the Lord of my leyſure will haue it ſo. Much good may it do the puppy of S. Fame, ſo to confute, and ſo to be confuted. Where his intelligence faileth, (as God wotteth, it faileth often) he will be ſo bold, without more inquiry, to checke the common ſenſe of Reaſon, with the proper ſenſe of his Imagination, infinitly more high in conceit, then deepe in vnderſtanding: and where any phraſe, or word

Digitized by Google

preſumeth to approch within his ſwing, that was not before enrowled in the Common-places of his paper booke, it is preſently meere Inkhorniſme: albeit he might haue heard the ſame from a thouſand mouthes of Iudgement, or read it in more then an hundred writings of eſtimation. Pythagoras Silence was wont to be a rule for Ignorance, or Immaturity: (no better bitt for vnlearned, or vnexpert youth, then Pythagoras Silence:) but Vnderſtand, or not Vnderſtand, both are one: if he vnderſtand, it is Dunſery: if he vnder / ſtand not, it is either Cabaliſme in matter, or Inkhorniſme in forme: whether he be ripe, or vnripe, all is raw, or rotten, that pleaſeth not his Imperiall taſt. Had he euer ſtudied any Pragmaticall Diſcourſe; or peruſed any Treaties of Confederacy, of peace, of truce, of intercourſe, of other forrein negotiations, (that is ſpecially noted for one of my Inkhorne wordes); or reſearched any actes, and monuments, Ciuill, or Eccleſiaſticall; or looked into any Lawes, Statutes, Iniunctions, Proclamations, (na, it is one of his witty flowtes, *He beginnes, like a Proclamation:* but few Treatiſes better penned, then ſome Proclamatiõs): or had he ſeene any autenticall inſtruments, Pragmatique articles, or other Politique Traicts: he would rather haue woondered I ſhould Vſe ſo fewe formall termes,

Digitized by Google

(which I purpoſely auoided, as not ſo vulgarly familiar) then haue maruelled at any, which I vſed. He is of no reading in compariſon, that doth not acknowledge euery terme in thoſe Letters to be autenticall Engliſh; and allow a thouſand other ordinary Pragmaticall termes, more ſtraunge then the ſtraungeſt in thoſe Letters, yet current at occaſion. The ignorant Idiot (for ſo I will prooue him in very truth) confuteth the artificiall wordes, which he neuer read: but the vayne fellow (for ſo he prooueth himſelfe in word, and deede) in a phantaſticall emulation preſumeth to forge a miſhapen rablement of abſurde, and ridiculous wordes, the proper badges of his new-fangled figure, called Foolariſme: ſuch as *Inkhorniſme, Abſoniſme, the moſt copious Carminiſt, thy Carminicall art, a Prouiditore of young Schollars, a Corrigidore of incongruitie, a queſt of Caualieros, Inamoratos on their workes, a Theologicall Gimpanado, a Dromidote Ergoniſt, ſacrilegiouſly cõtaminated, decrepite capacitie, fictionate perſon, humour vnconuerſable, merriments vnexilable, / the horriſonant pipe of inueterate antiquitie*; and a number of ſuch Inkhornish phraſes, as it were a pan of outlandiſh collops, the very bowels of his profoundeſt Schollariſme. For his Eloquence paſſeth my intelligence, that cleapeth himſelfe a *Callimunco* for pleading his Companions cauſe

Digitized by Google

in his owne Apology: and me a *Piſtlepragmos*, for defending my frendes in my Letters: and very artificially *interfuſeth Finicallitie, ſillogiſtrie, diſputatiue right, hermaphrodite phraſes, declamatorie ſtiles, cenſoriall moralizers, vnlineall vſurpers of iudgement, infamizers of vice, new infringement to deſtitute the inditemēt, deriding dunſtically, banging abominationly, vnhandſoming of diuinityſhip, abſurdifying of phraſes, ratifying of truthable and Eligible Engliſh, a calme dilatement of forward harmefulneſſe, and backward irefulneſſe*, and how many ſundry diſhes of ſuch dainty fritters? rare iunkets, and a delicate ſeruice for him, that cōpiled the moſt delitious Commentaries, *De optimitate triparum.* And what ſay you Boyes, the flatteringeſt hope of your moothers, to *a Porch of Panim Pilfryes, Peſtred with Prayſes*? Dare the perteſt, or defteſt of you, hunt the letter, or hauke a metaphor, with ſuch a Tite-tute-tate? He weeneth himſelfe a ſpeciall penman: as he were the headman of the Pāfletting crew, next, and immediately after Greene: and although he be a harſh Oratour with his toungue, (euen the filed Suada of Iſocrates, wanted the voyce of a Siren, or the ſound of an Eccho) yet would he ſeeme as fine a Secretary with his penne, as euer was Bembus in Latin, or Macchiauell in Italian, or Gueuara in Spaniſh, or Amiot in French: and

Digitized by Google

with a confidence preaſſeth into the rowte of that humorous rake, that affecteth the reputation of ſupreme Singularity. But he muſt craue a little more acquaintance at the hand of Art, and ſerue an apprentiſhood of ſome nine, or ten yeares / in the ſhop of curious Imitation (for his wild Phantaſie will not be allowed to maintaine compariſon with curious Imitation) before he will be hable to performe the twentith, or fortith part of that ſufficiency, whereunto the crankneſſe of his Imagination already aſpireth; as more exquiſite, then the Atticiſme of Iſocrates, or more puiſſant then the fury of Taſſo. But how inſolently ſoeuer groſe Ignorance preſumeth of itſelſe, (none ſo hawty, as the baſeſt Buſſard): or how deſperatly ſoeuer foole-hardy Ambition aduaunceth his owne colours, (none ſo foole-hardy, as the blindeſt Hobb): I haue ſeldome read a more gariſh, and pibald ſtyle, in any ſcribling Inkhorniſt; or taſted a more vnſauory ſlaumpaump of wordes, and ſentences in any ſluttiſh Pamfletter; that denounceth not defiance againſt the rules of Oratory, and the directions of the Engliſh Secretary. Which may here and there ſtumble vpon ſome tolerable ſentence, neighbourly borrowed, or featly picked out-of ſome freſh Pamflet: but ſhall neuer finde three ſentences togither, worth any allowance: and as for a fine, or neat period, in the dainty and pithy

Digitized by Google

Veyne of Iſocrates, or Xenophon, marry that were a periwig of a Siren, or a wing of the very bird of Arabia, an ineſtimable relique. Tuſh a point, neither curious Hermogenes, nor trim Iſocrates, nor ſtately Demoſthenes, are for his tooth : nor painting Tully, nor caruing Cæſar, nor purple-dying Liuy, for his humour. It is for Cheeke, or Aſcham, to ſtand leuelling of Colons, or ſquaring of Periods, by meaſure, and number: his penne is like a ſpigot ; and the Wine-preſſe a dullard to his Inke-preſſe. There is a certaine liuely and friſking thing, of a queint, and capricous nature, as peerleſſe as nameleſſe, and as admirable, as ſingular, that ſcorneth to be a booke-woorme, or to imitate / the excellenteſt artificiality of the moſt renowned worke-maſters, that antiquity affourdeth. The witt of this, & that odd Moderniſt, is their owne: & no ſuch minerall of richeſt Art, as prægnant Nature ; the plentifulleſt woombe of rare Inuention, and exquiſite Elocution. Whuiſt Art : and Nature aduaunce thy precious Selfe in thy moſt gorgeous, and magnificent robes: and if thy new deſcant be ſo many notes above old Æla, Good-now be no niggard of thy ſweet accents, & heauenly harmony ; but reach the antike muſes their right Leripup. Deſolate Eloquẽce, and forlorne Poetry, thy moſt-humble ſuppliants in forma pauperum, cladd in mournefull and dreery weedes, as becom-

Digitized by Google

meth their lamentable caſe, lye proſtrate at thy dainty foote, and adore, the Idoll-excellency of thy monſtrous Singularity. O ſtately Homer, and lofty Pindarus, whoſe witt mounteth like Pegaſus; whoſe verſe ſtreameth like Nilus; whoſe Inuention flameth like Ætna, whoſe Elocution rageth like Sirius; whoſe paſſion bluſtereth like Boreas, whoſe reaſon breatheth like Zephirus; whoſe nature ſauoreth like Tempe, and whoſe Art perfumeth like Paradiſe: ô the mightieſt Spirites of couragious Vigour, of whom the delicate Grecian, worthy Roman, and gallant Vulgar Muſes learned their ſhrilleſt tunes, and hyperbolicall notes: ô the fierceſt Trompets of heroicall Valour, that with the ſtraunge Sympathy of your diuine Fury, and with thoſſame piercing motions of heauenly inſpiration, were woont to rauiſh the affections, and euen to mealt the bowels of braueſt mindes: ſee, ſee what a woondrous quaime.

But peace milkemaide: you will ſtill be ſhaming yourſelfe, and your bringing-vpp. Hadſt thou learned to diſcerne the faireſt face of Eloquence, from the fowleſt viſage / of Barbariſme; or the goodlyeſt frame of Method from the ill-fauoredeſt ſhape of Confuſion: as thou canſt deſcry the fineſt flower from the courſeſt branne, or the ſweeteſt creame frō the ſowreſt whey:

Digitized by Google

peraduenture thou wouldeſt dote indeede vpon the bewtifull and dainty feature of that naturall ſtile, that appropriate ſtile, vpon which himſelfe is ſo deepely inamored. I would it were out-of peraduenture: no man more greedy, to behold that miraculous Art of emprooued Nature. He may malapertly bragge in the vaine oſtentation of his owne naturall conceit; and if it pleaſe him, make a Golden Calfe of his woodden ſtuffe: but ſhewe me any halfe page without piperly phraſes, and tinkerly compoſition: and ſay I am the ſimpleſt Artiſt, that euer looked faire Rhetorique, or ſweet Poetry in the face. It is the deſtiny of our lãguage to be peſtred with a rablement of botchers in Print: but what a ſhamefull ſhame is it for him, that maketh an Idoll of his owne penne, and raiſeth-vpp an huge expectation of paper-miracles, (as if Hermes Triſmegiſt were newly riſen from the dead, and perſonally mounted vpon Danters Preſſe, to emprooue himſelfe as ranke a bungler in his mightieſt worke of Supererogation, as the ſtarkeſt Patch-pannell of them all, or the groſeſt hammer-drudge in a country. He diſdaineth Thomas Delone, Philip Stubs, Robert Armin, and the common Pamfletters of London, euẽ the painfulleſt Chroniclers tooe; bicauſe they ſtand in his way, hinder his ſcribling traffique, obſcure his reſplendiſhing

Digitized by Google

Fame, or haue not Chronicled him in their Catalogues of the renowned moderne Autors, as he meritoriouſly meriteth, and may peraduenture be remembred hereafter. But may not Thomas Delone, Philip Stubs, Robert Armin, and the reſt of thoſe miſuſed perſons, more diſ / dainfully diſdaine him; bicauſe he is ſo much vayner, ſo little learneder, ſo nothing eleganter, then they; and they ſo much honeſter, ſo little obſcurer, ſo nothing contemptibler, then he? Surely Thomas, it were pollicy, to boaſt leſſe with Thomas Delone, or to atchieue more with Thomas More. If Vaunting, or craking may make thee ſingular, thy Art is incomparable, thy Wit ſuperexcellent, thy Learning omniſufficient, thy memory infinite, thy dexterity incomprehenſible, thy force horrible, thy other giftes more then admirable: but when thou haſt gloried thy vttermoſt, and ſtruggled with might, and maine, to ſeeme the Great Turke of Secretaries; if my eye ſight be anything in the Art of endighting, (wherein it hath pleaſed fauour, to repute me ſomething), vpon my credit for euer, thou haſt nothing in thee of valour, but a railing Gall, and a ſwelling Bladder. For thy penne is as very a Gentleman Foiſt, as any pick-purſe liuing: and, that which is moſt-miſerable, not a more famous neckverſe, then thy choice; to

Digitized by Google

thiſelfe pernicious, to youth daungerous, to thy frendes grieuous, to thy aduerſaries pittifull, to Vertue odious, to learning ignominious, to humanity noyous, to diuinitie intolerable, to autority puniſhable, to the world contemptible. I longed to ſee thy beſt amendement, or worſt auengement: but thy gay beſt, *vt ſupra*, proouetb nothing; and thy main worſt, *vt infra*, leſſe then nothing. Neuer ſilly mans expectation ſo deluded with contrary euents vpon the Stage, (yet Fortune ſometime is a queint Comedian, far beyond the Suppoſes of Arioſto) as theſe Strange Newes haue coony-caught my coniecture; more deceiued, then my Prognoſtication of the laſt yeare, which hapned to be a true Prophet of ſome diſmall Contingents. Though I neuer phanſied Tautologies, yet I cannot repeat / it enough: I looked for a treaty of pacification: or imagined thou wouldeſt arme thy quill, like a ſtowt champion, with the compleat harneſſe of Witt, and Art: na, I feared the braſen ſhield, and the braſen bootes of Goliah, and that ſame hideous ſpeare, like a weauers beame: but it is onely thy fell ſtomacke, that bluſtereth like a Northeren winde: alas, thy witt is as tame, as a duck; thy art as freſh as ſower ale in ſummer; thy braſen ſhield in thy forehead; thy braſen bootes in thy hart; thy weauers beame in thy toungue; a more terrible launce, then the hideous

Digitized by Google

ſpeare, were the moſt of thy Power equiualent to the leaſt of thy Spite. I ſay not; what aileth thy Gorgons head? or what is become of thy Sampſons lockes? (yet where miracles were promiſed, and atcheiuements of Supererogation threatened, they had reaſon, that dreaded vnknowen forces): but ô blaſtes of diuine Fury, where is your ſupernaturall proweſſe? and ô horne of abundance, what meaneth this dearth of plenty, this penury of ſuperfluitie, this infancie of eloquence, this ſimplicitie of cunning, this ſtupiditie of nimbleneſſe, this obſcuritie of brauerie, this nullity of omniſufficiencie? Was Pegaſus euer a cowe in a cage, or Mercurie a mouſe in a cheeſe, or Induſtrie a ſnaile in a ſhell, or Dexteritie a dogge in a dublet, or legierdemane a ſloweworme, or Viuacitie a laſie-bones, or Entelechy a ſlugplum? Can liuely, and winged ſpirites ſuppreſſe the diuinitie of their ethereall, and Seraphicall nature? Can the thunder tongue-tye, or the lightning ſmoother, or the tempeſt calme, or loue quench, or Zeale luke-warme, or valour manicle, or, excellencie mew-vpp, or perfection geld, or ſupererogatiõ combecutt itſelfe? Is it not impoſſible, for Humanity, to be a ſpittle-man, Rhetorique a dummerell, Poetry a tumbler, Hiſtory a bankrowt, Philoſophy a / broker, wit a cripple, courage a iade? How could the ſweet Mermaids, or dainty Nymphes

Digitized by Google

finde in their tender harts, to be ſo farre diuorced from their queinteſt, and galiardeſt minion? Art, take heede of an aeger appetite, if a little greedie deuouring of ſingularitie will ſo ſoone gett the hicket, and make thee (as it were) belch the ſloouens Oratorie, and (as a man would ſay) parbreake the ſluttes Poetry. Pure Singularitie wrong not thy arch-excellent Selfe, but embrace him with both thy armes, that huggeth thee with his fine wittes; and cowll him with thy two corall bracelets, that buſſeth thee with his two ruby lippes, and his three diamant powers, naturall, animall, and vitall. Precious Singularity how canſt thou chooſe but dote vpon his alabaſter necke, whoſe inuentiue part can be no leſſe, then a ſky-cooloured Sapphire, like the heauenly deuiſes of the delitious Poeteſſe Sappho, the god-moother of that azure gemme; whoſe Rhetoricall figures, ſanguin and reſplendiſhing Carbuncles, like the flamy Pyrops of the gliſtering Pallace of the Sun: whoſe alluring perſuaſions, Amethiſts; whoſe cutting girds, adamants; whoſe conquering Ergos, loadſtones; whoſe whole cõceit as greene, as the greeneſt Iaſper; whoſe Orient witt, the renowned achates of king Pyrrhus, that is, the tabernacle or chauncell of the Muſes, Apollo ſitting in the midſt, and playing vpon his Iuory harpe moſt enchauntingly. Is it poſſible, thoſe powerfull

Digitized by Google

wordes of antiquity, whoſe mightie influence was woont to debaſe the miraculous operation of the moſt-vertuous ſtones, hearbes, and ſtarres (Philoſophy knoweth the incredible force of ſtones, hearbes, & ſtarres) ſhould be to ſeeke in a panting inſpired breſt, the cloſet of reuealed myſteries, and garden of infuſed graces? What lockes, or barres of Iron, can hold that quickſiluer Mercury, / whoſe nimble vigour diſdaineth the priſon, and will diſplay itſelfe in his likenes, maugre whatſoeuer empeachment of iron Vulcan, or woodden Dædalus? I hoped to finde, that I luſted to ſee, the very ſingular ſubiect of that inuincible & omnipotent Eloquence, that in the worthieſt age of the world, intituled heroicall, put the moſt-barbarous tyranny of men, and the moſt-ſauage wildneſſe of beaſtes, to ſilence; and arreared woonderful admiration in the hart-roote of obſtinateſt Rebellion, otherwiſe how vntractable? Had I not cauſe to platforme new Theorickes, and Idees of monſtrous excellency, when the parturient mountaine of miracles, was to be deliuered of his mighty burden of Supererogation? Who would not ride poſt, to behold the chariot of his Triumph, that glorieth, as if he had woon both the Indyes from the Spaniard; or Conſtantinople from the Turke; or Babylon from the Sophi? But hollà braue Gentlemen, and alacke ſweet Gentlewoomen, that would ſo fayne behold

Digitized by Google

S. Fame in the pompe of her maieſtie; neuer poore ſuckling hope ſo incredibly croſbitten with more then exceſſiue defection. I looked, and looked for a ſhining Sunne of Singularity, that ſhould amaze the eyes, and aſtoniſh the harts of the beholders: but neuer poore ſhimering Sunne of Singularity ſo horribly eclipſed. I perceiue, one good honeſt aker of performance, may be more worth, then a whole land of Promiſe. Take heede aſpiring mindes, you that deeme yourſelues the Paragon wittes of the world; leſſe your hilles of iollity be conuerted into dales of obſcurity; and the pōpe of your glory, become like this pumpe of ſhame. Euen when Enuy boyled his inke; Malice ſcotched his penne; Pride parched his paper; Fury inflamed his hart; S. Fame raged, like S. Georges Dragon: marke the Conclu / ſion: the weather was cold; his ſtile froſt-bitten; and his witt nipped in the head. Take away the flaunting and huffing braueries of his railing tropes and craking figures: and you ſee the whole galiarde of his Rhetorique, that flowteth the poore Philippiques of Tully, and Demoſthenes: and mocketh him, that chaunced to name them once in foure Letters; as he vſed their word Entelechy, now a vulgar French, and Engliſh word, once in foure and twenty Sonnets. The wiſe Prieſt could not tell, whither Epiphany were a man-ſaint, or a

Digitized by Google

wooman-ſaint, or what the diuell it was. Such an Epiphany to this learned man is Entelechy; the onely quinteſſence of excellent, and diuine mindes, as is abooue mentioned; ſhewing whence they came by their heauēly and perpetuall motion. What other word could expreſſe that noble and vigorous motion, quicker then quickſiluer; and the liuely ſpring, or rather the Veſtal fier of that euer-ſtirring Vertue of Cæſar, *Neſcia ſtare loco*: a myſtery, and a very Chimera to this ſwad of ſwaddes, that beginneth like a Bullbeare, goeth-on like a bullocke, endeth like a bullfinch, and hath neuer a ſparkle of pure Entelechy. Gentlemen, now you know the good nature, and handſome Art of the man; if you happen vpon a feather, or ſome morſell for your likyng, (it is a very ſory Booke, that yeeldeth nothing for your liking) thanke the true Autor, of whoſe prouiſion you haue taſted, and ſay not but Thomas Naſh has read ſomthing, that affecting to ſeeme an Vniuerſity of ſciences, and a Royall Exchaunge of tounges, would be thought to haue deuoured Libraries, and to know all thinges, like Iarchas, and Syſarion, na, like Adam, and Salomon, the archpatrons of our new Omniſcians. If he did ſo in verity, it were the better for him, and not the worſe for me: but you ſee his / doing, and my ſuffering. Neither I, nor my betters can pleaſe all: nor he, nor his

Digitized by Google

Punyes will diſpleaſe all: but as in the beſt ſomething remaineth, that may be amended, without derogation to their credit; ſo in the worſt there may appeare ſomething, worth the allowance, with no great cõmendation to their perſon. Were I diſpoſed to diſcourſe, as ſomtime I haue bene forward vpõ leſſe occaſiõ, for the onely exerciſe of my ſtile, and ſome practiſe of my reading; I could with a facility declare at-large, that may briefly be touched. Amongſt ſo many notable workes of diuine wittes, excepting the workes of Gods owne finger; there is not any ſo abſolutely excellent, wherein ſome blemiſh of imperfection may not be noted: nor amongſt ſo many contemptible Pamflets, any ſo ſimply baſe, but may yeeld ſome little frute of aduertiſement, or ſome few bloſſoms of diſcourſe. In the ſouerain workemanſhip of Nature herſelfe, what garden of flowers without weedes? what orchard of trees without woormes? what field of Corne without cockle? what ponde of fiſhes without frogges? what ſky of light without darkneſſe? what mirrour of knowledge without ignorance? what man of Earth without frailty? what commodity of the world without diſcommodity? Oh! what an honorable, and wonderfull Creature were Perfection, were there any ſuch viſible Creature vnder heauen? But pure Excellency dwelleth onely abooue; and

Digitized by Google

what mortall wiſedome can accleere itſelfe from errour? or what heroicall vertue can iuſtifie, I haue no vice? The moſt precious things vnder the Sunne, haue their defaultes: and the vileſt thinges vpon Earth, want not their graces. Virgill could enrich himſelfe with the rubbiſh of Ennius: to how many ruſty-duſty Waines was braue Liuy beholding? Tully, that was as fine / as the Cruſado, diſdained not ſome furniture of his predeceſſours, that were as courſe, as canuas: and he that will diligently ſeeke, may aſſuredly finde treaſure in merle, corne in ſtraw, gold in droſſe, pearles in ſhell-fiſhes, precious ſtones in the dunghill of Eſope, rich iewels of learning, and wiſedome, in ſome poore boxes. He that remembreth Humfrey Cole, a Mathematicall Mechaniciã, Matthew Baker a ſhip-wright, Iohn Shute an Architect, Robert Norman a Nauigatour, William Bourne a Gunner, Iohn Heſter a Chimiſt, or any like cunning, and ſubtile Empirique, (Cole, Baker, Shute, Norman, Bourne, Heſter, will be remembred, when greater Clarkes ſhalbe forgotten) is a prowd man, if he contemne expert artiſans, or any ſenſible induſtrious Practitioner, howſoeuer Vnlectured in Schooles, or Vnlettered in bookes. Euen the Lord Vulcan himſelfe, the ſuppoſed God of the forge, and thunder-ſmith of the great king Iupiter, tooke the repulſe at the handes of the

Digitized by Google

Lady Minerua, whom he would in ardent looue haue taken to wife. Yet what witt, or Pollicy honoreth not Vulcan? and what profounde Mathematician, like Digges, Hariot, or Dee, eſteemeth not the pregnant Mechanician? Let euery man in his degree enioy his due: and let the braue enginer, fine Dædaliſt, ſkilfull Neptuniſt, maruelous Vulcaniſt, and euery Mercuriall occupationer, that is, euery Maſter of his craft, and euery Doctour of his myſtery, be reſpected according to the vttermoſt extent of his publique ſeruice, or priuate induſtry. I cannot ſtand to ſpecifie particularities. Our late writers are, as they are: and albeit they will not ſuffer me to ballance them with the honorable Autors of the Romanes, Grecians, and Hebrues, yet I will craue no pardon of the higheſt, to do the ſimpleſt no wrong. In Grafton, Holinſhed, / and Stowe; in Heywood, Tuſſer, and Gowge; in Gaſcoigne, Churchyarde, and Floide; in Ritch, Whetſtone, and Munday; in Stanyhurſt, Fraunce, and Watſon; in Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell; in an hundred ſuch vulgar writers, many things are commendable, diuers things notable, ſome things excellent. Fraunce, Kiffin, Warner, and Daniell, of whom I haue elſewhere more eſpeciall occaſion to entreate, may haply finde a thankefull remembraunce of their laudable trauailes. For a poliſhed, and garniſhed

Digitized by Google

ſtile, fewe go-beyonde Cartwright, and the chiefeſt of his Confuters, furniſhed writers: and how few may wage compariſon with Reinolds, Stubbes, Mulcaſter, Norton, Lambert, and the Lord Henry Howarde? whoſe ſeuerall writings the ſiluer file of the workeman recommendeth to the plauſible interteinement of the daintieſt Cenſure. Who can deny, but the Reſolution, and Mary Magdalens funerall teares, are penned elegantly, and pathetically? Scottes diſcoouery of Witchcraft, diſmaſketh ſundry egregious impoſtures, and in certaine principall Chapters, & ſpeciall paſſages, hitteth the nayle on the head with a witneſſe: howſoeuer I could haue wiſhed, he had either dealt ſomewhat more curteouſly with Monſieur Bodine, or cõfuted him ſomewhat more effectually. Let me not forget the Apology of ſundry proceedings by Iuriſdiction Eccleſiaſticall, or, the Aunſwere to an Abſtract of certaine Actes of Parliament, Iniunctions, Canõs, conſtitutions, and ſynodals Prouinciall: vnleſſe I will ſkip two of the moſt-materiall, and moſt-formall Treatiſes, that any Engliſh Print hath lately yeelded. Might I reſpectiuely preſume to intimate my ſlender opinion, without flattery, or other vndecency: methought euer Doctour Whitgift (whom I name with honour) in his Sermons was / pithy: Doctour Hutton profound: Doctour Young piercing to the quicke:

Digitized by Google

Doctour Chaderton copious: M. Curtes elegant: M. Wickam ſententious: M. Drant curious: M. Deering ſweet: Doctor Still ſound: Doctor Vnderhill ſharpe: Doctor Matthew fine: M. Lawherne gallãt: M. Dooue eloquent: M. Andrewes learned: M. Chaderton methodicall: M. Smith Patheticall: ſundry other in their proper veyne notable, ſome exquiſite, a few ſingular. Yet which of the beſt hath all perfections? (*nihil omni ex parte beatum*) or which of the meaneſt hath not ſome excellency? I cannot read-ouer all: I haue ſeldome heard ſome: (it was neuer my happ to heare Doctour Cooper, Doctour Humfry, or Doctor Fletcher, but in Latin): and I would be loth to iniury, or preiudice any, that deſerueth well, *Viua voce*, or by pen. I deeme him wiſe, that maketh choice of the beſt; auoideth the worſt; reapeth fruite by both; deſpiſeth nothing, that is not to be abhorred; accepteth of anything, that may be tollerated; interteineth euery thing with cõmendation, fauour, cõtentment, or amẽdment. Lucians aſſe, Apuleius aſſe, Agrippas aſſe, Macchiauels aſſe, miſelfe ſince I was dubbed an aſſe by the only Monarch of aſſes, haue found ſauory herbes amongſt nettles; roſes amõgſt prickles; berryes amongſt buſhes; marrow amõgſt bones; graine amõgſt ſtubble; a little corne amõgſt a great deale of chaff. The *abiectest naturalls* haue

Digitized by Google

their ſpecificall properties, and ſome wondrous vertues: and Philoſophy will not flatter the *nobleſt*, or *worthieſt naturals* in their venoms, or impurities. True Alchimy cã alledge much for her Extractions, and quinteſſences: & true Phiſique more for her corrections, and purgations. In the beſt, I cannot commende the badd; and in the baddeſt, I reiect not the good: but preciſely play the Alchimiſt, in ſeeking pure and ſweet / balmes in the rankeſt poiſons. A pithy, or filed ſentence is to be embraced, whoſoeuer is the Autor: and for the leſt benefit receiued, a good minde will render dutifull thankes, euen to his greateſt enemy. ô Humanity, my Lullius, or ô Diuinitie, my Paracelſus, how ſhould a man become that peece of Alchimy, that can turne the Rattes-bane of Villany into the Balme of honeſty; or correct the Mandrake of ſcurrility with the myrrhe of curteſie, or the ſaffron of temperance. Conceiue a fountaine of contentation, as it were of Oyle, or a bath of delight, as it were of nectar; and preferre that ſaffron, or myrrhe, that odoriferous ſaffron, or aromaticall myrrhe, before this ſouerain Oyle; and that Balme, that diuine Balme, before this heauenly nectar. No naturall Reſtoratiue, like that ſaffron, or myrrhe, the very death of contention; nor any artificiall Cordiall, like that Balme, the very life of humanity, or ſhould I

Digitized by Google

rather ſay? the very life of life. We haue many new Methods, and platformes; and ſome no doubt as exquiſite as ſcrupulous: but aſſuredly it were an excellent method, and ſingular platforme, to honour the wiſe, and moderate the foole: to make-much of the learned, and inſtruct the ignorant; to embrace the good, and reforme the badd; to wiſh harme to none, & do well to all; and finally (for that is the ſcope of this, and ſome other Diſcourſes) to commende the Fox, and prayſe the Aſſe. Martin himſelfe is not altogither a waſpe: nor Browne altogither a Canker-woorme: nor Barrow altogither a Scorpion: nor haply Kett altogither a Cockatrice. Take heede of the ſnake in the graſſe, or the padd in the ſtraw; and feare no bugges. Be Martin a Martin Guerra; Browne a browne-bill; Barrow a wheelbarrow; Kett a kight; H. N. an O. K; if any ſound iudgements finde themſelues beholding vnto them in / any point of aduiſement, or conſideration (ſingular men, and namely Sciſmatiques, and Heretiques were euer woont to haue ſome thing, or other, extraordinary, and remarkable) they may without my contradiction confeſſe their beholdingneſſe, and for ſo much profeſſe a recogniſance of their dett. I thanke Naſh for ſomething: Greene for more: Pap-hatchet for much more: Perne for moſt of all. Of him I learned to know him, to know my

Digitized by Google

enemies, to know my frends, to know miſelfe, to know the world, to know fortune, to know the mutability of times, and ſlipperineſſe of occaſions: an ineſtimable knowledge, and incomparably more worth, then Doctor Gregories *Ars mirabilis*, or Politians *Panepiſtemon*. He was an old ſoaker indeede: and had more witt in his hoary head, then ſix hundred of theſe flooriſhing greene heads, and luſty curled pates. He would either wiſely hold his peace: or ſmoothly flatter me to my face: or ſuerly pay-home with a witneſſe: but commonly in a corner, or in a maze, where the Autour might be vncertaine, or his packing intricate, or his purpoſe ſome way excuſable. No man could beare a heauy iniury more lightly: or forbeare a learned aduerſary more cunningly: or bourde a wilfull frend more dryly: or circumuent a daungerous foe more couertly: or countermine the deepeſt vnderminer more ſuttelly: or lullaby the circumſpecteſt Argus more ſweetly: or transforme himſelfe into all ſhapes more deftly: or play any part more kindly. He had ſuch a Patience, as might ſoften the hardeſt hart: ſuch a ſobermoode, as might ripen the greeneſt witt: ſuch a ſlye dexterity, as might quicken the dulleſt ſpirite: ſuch a ſcrupulous manner of proceeding in doubtfull caſes, as might putt a deepe conſideration into the ſhalloweſt phantaſy: ſuch a ſuſpicious ielouſy,

Digitized by Google

as / might ſmell-out the ſecreteſt complot, & defeat any practiſe: ſuch an inextricable ſophiſtry, as might teach an Agathocles to hypocriſe profoundly, or a Hieron to tyranniſe learnedly. Whereas other carried their harts in their toungues, and their heades in their pennes; he liked no ſuch ſimplicity, but after a ſmugge, and fleering guiſe, carried his toungue in his hart, his penne in his head; his dagger in his ſleeue; his loue in his booſome, his ſpite in his pocket: and whē their ſpeech, writing, or coũtenance bewrayed their affectiõ, (as the maner is), nothing but his fact diſcouered his drift; & not the Beginning, but the End was the interpreter of his meaning. Some of vs, by way of experiment, aſſayed to feele his pulſe, and to tickle his wily veynes in his owne veyne, with ſmoothing, and gloſing as handſomly, as we could: but the bottome of his minde, was a Gulfe of the maine, & nothing could ſound him deepely, but the iſſue. I wis elder men had bene too-young to manage ſuch an enterpriſe with ſucceſſe: and the fineſt intelligencer, or ſageſt Politician in a ſtate, would vndoubtedly haue bene grauelled in the execution of that raſh attempt. He could ſpeake by contraries, as queintly as Socrates; and do by contraries, as ſhrewdly as Tiberius: the maſter of Philip de Comines, Lewes the French king, one of the buſieſt, ielouſeſt, and craftieſt Princes, that

Digitized by Google

euer raigned in that kingdome, might haue borrowed the Foxes Satchell of him : and peraduenture not onely Æſops, or Archilochus Fox, but euen Lyſanders Fox, Ariſtomenes Fox, Piſiſtratus Fox, Vlyſſes Fox, Chirons Fox, and Proteus owne Fox might learne of him, to play the Fox in the hole. For Stephen Gardiners Fox, or Macchiauels Fox, are too-young Cubbes, to compare with him; that would ſeeme any thing, rather then a Fox, and be a Fox / rather then any thing elſe. Legendaries may recorde woonderments: but examine the ſuttelleſt Counſels, or the wilyeſt practiſes of Gargantua himſelfe, and euen Gargantua himſelfe, albeit his gowne were furred with two thouſand, & fiue hundred Fox-ſkinnes, mought haue bene his Pupill. And I doubt not but he that worſhipped *Solem in Leone*, after ſome few Lectures in his Aſtronomy, would haue honored *Solem in Vulpe*. He once kept a Cubbe for his pleaſure in Peter-houſe in Cambridge (as ſome keepe birds, ſome ſquirrels, ſome puppyes, ſome apes, and ſo forth) and miniſtred notable matter to S. Maryes Pulpet, with Stories of the Cubb, and the Fox, whoſe Actes, and Monuments are notorious: but had the young-one bene as cunning an Artiſt for his part, as the Old-one was for his : I beleeue, all the Colledges in both Vniuerſities, or in the great Vniuerſitie of Chriſtendome, could not haue pat-

Digitized by Google

terned the young mã with ſuch an other Batchelour of ſophiſtry, or the old maſter with ſuch an other Doctour of Hypocriſie. Men may diſcourſe at pleaſure, and feede themſelues with Carpes, and Pikes: but I haue knowen few of ſo good a nature, ſo deuoide of obſtinacy; ſo far alienated from contumacy; ſo contrary to frowardneſſe, or teſtiueneſſe; ſo tractable, ſo buxom, ſo flexible; ſo appliable to euery time, place, and perſon; ſo curious in obſeruing the leaſt circumſtance of importance, or aduantage; ſo conformable to publique proceedings, and priuate occaſions; ſo reſpectfull to euery one of quality; ſo curteous to men of woorſhip; ſo dutifull to men of honour; ſo ceremonious in tendering his deuotion to his good Lordes, or good Ladyes; ſo obedient to autority; ſo loyall to maieſty; ſo indifferent to all, and in all. He was gentle without familiarity, (for he doubted contempt): ſeuere / without rigour, (for he feared odiouſneſſe): pleaſant without leuity, (for he regarded his eſtimation): graue without ſolẽnity, (for he curred popular fauour): not raſh, but quicke; not haſty, but ſpeedy; not hoat, but warme; not eger in ſhow, but earneſt in deede; no barker at any, but a biter of ſome; round, and ſound. The Clergy neuer wanted excellent Fortune-wrightes: but what Byſhop, or Politician in Englãd, ſo great a Temporiſer, as he, whom

Digitized by Google

euery alteration founde a new-man, euen as new as the new Moone? And as he long yawned to be an Archbiſhop, or Byſhop, in the one, or other Church, (they wronged him, that termed the Image of both Churches, a neuter): ſo did he not arch-deſerue, to be inſtalled the puling Preacher of Humility, humility, humility; and the gaping Oratour of Obedience, obedience, obedience? Was not euer *Pax vobis*, one end of his gaſping Sermon, & the very foote of his warbling Song? Be it percaſe a ſmall matter to temporiſe in foure alterations of Kinges, and Queenes: but what an Ambidexterity, or rather Omnidexterity had the man, that at one, and the ſame meeting, had a pleaſing Toungue for a Proteſtant, a flattering Eye for a Papiſt, and a familiar nodd for a good fellow? It was nothing with him to Temporiſe *in genere*, or *in ſpecie*, according to Macchiauels grounde of fortunate ſucceſſe in the world; that could ſo formally, & featly Perſoniſe *in indiuiduo*. He muſt know all the ſinewes of commodity, and acquaint himſelfe with all the ioints of aduantage, that will liue, and teach other to liue. *ô fœlix Cato, tu ſolus noſti Viuere.* Or if Cato were ouer-peremptory, and ſtoicall, to enioy that felicity, *ô fœlix Perne, tua ſolius Ars viuendi.* Doubtleſſe it were better for the world, by infinite maſſes of millions, could the barbarous and Tragicall Tyrants,

Digitized by Google

Saturne, and Mars, / two diuellifh Gods, moderate their fury, as he could do: or the hypocriticall, and Comicall Tyrants, Iupiter, and Mercury, two godly Diuels, temper their cunning, as he could do. It was in him, to giue inftructions vnto Ouid, for the repenning of his Metamorphofes anew: and he better merited the name of Vertumnus, then Vertumnus himfelfe. His defignements were myfteries: his Councels, Oracles: his intentions like Minotaure in the Labyrinth: his actions like the Stratagemes of Fabius: his defiance like the wellcome of Circe: his menaces, like the fongs of the Sirens: his curfes, like the bleffinges of thofe witches in Aphrica, that forfpoke, what they prayfed, and deftroyed, what they wifhed to be faued. I haue feene fpannels, mungrels, libbards, antelops; fcorpions, fnakes, cockatrices, vipers, and many other Serpents in fugar-worke: but to this day neuer faw fuch a ftanding-difh of Sugar-worke, as that fweet-toungued Doctor; that fpake pleafingly, whatfoeuer he thought; and was otherwhiles a fayre Prognoftication of fowle weather. Such an autenticall Irony engrofed, as all Oratory cannot eftfoones counterpane. Smooth voyces do well in moft focieties; and go currently away in many recknings, when rowgh-hewne words do but lay blockes in their own way. He found it in a thoufand experiences;

Digitized by Google

and was the preciſeſt practitioner of that ſoft, and tame Rhetorique, that euer I knew in my dealings. And in caſe I ſhould prefer any man of whatſoeuer quality before him, for a ſtayed gouernement of his affections, (which he alwayes ruled, as Homers Minerua brideled Pegaſus), or for an infinite and bottomleſſe patience, ſibb to the patience of Anaxarchus, or Iob, I ſhould iniury him, and mine own cõſcience, exceedingly. Were he handeled, as London kennels are vſed of ſluttes, or the Thames / of ſloouens; he could pocket-it-vp, as handſomely, as they; and complaine in as fewe wordes, as any chanell, or riuer in England, when they are moſt contumelioufly depraued. His other vertues, were colours in graine: his learning, lawne in ſtarch: his wiſedome, napry in ſuddes: his conſcience, the weather in Aprill, when he was young; the weather in Septẽber, as he grew elder: the weather in February, toward his end; and not ſuch a current Prognoſticatiõ for the fifty yeares, wherein he flooriſhed, as the Ephemerides of his Conſcience. For his ſmug, and Canonicall countenaunce, certainly he mought haue bene S. Boniface himſelfe: for his fayre, and formall ſpeach, S. Benedict, or S. Eulaly: for his merry cõceits, S. Hillary: for his good huſbandry, (he was merry, and wiſe) S. Seruatius: for his inuincible

Digitized by Google

ſufferance, S. Vincent the Martir: for his retracting, or recanting, S. Auguſtine: for his not ſeeing all thinges, S. Bernard: for his preaching to geeſe, S. Frauncis, or S. Fox: for his praying, a S. Phariſe: for his faſting, a S. Publicane: for his chaſtitie, a *Sol in virgine:* for his paſtorall deuotion, a Shepheards Calendar: for his Fame, an Almanacke of Saincts. But if euer any were Patience incorporate, it was he: and if euer any were Hypocriſy incarnate, it was he; vnto whõ I promiſed to dedicate an eternall memoriall of his immortall vertues, and haue payed ſome little part of my vowes. I twice, or thriſe tryed him to his face, ſomewhat ſawcily, and ſmartly: but the Picture of Socrates, or the Image of S. Andrew, not ſo vnmooueable: and I ſtill reuerence the honorable remembraunce of that graue, and moſt eloquent Silence, as the ſageſt leſſon of my youth. Had Naſhe a dramme of his witt, his Aunſwere ſhould haue bene Mum; or his Confutation, the ſting of the Scorpion. Other Straunge Newes, like / Pap-hatchets rapp with a Bable, are of the nature of that ſame ſnowt-horned Rhinoceros, that biteth himſelfe by the noſe; and beſturre them, like the dowty fencer of Barnewell, that played his taking-vp with a Recumbentibus, and his laying-downe with a broken pate in ſome three, or foure corners of his head. He muſt

Digitized by Google

reuenge himſelfe with a learned Diſcourſe of deepeſt Silence, or come better prouided, then the edge of the raſour, that would be valued as wiſe, as that Apollo Doctour. Whoſe Epitaph none can diſplay accordingly, but ſome Sprite of the Ayer, or the fier. For his Zeale to God, and the Church, was an aery Triplicity: and his deuotion to his Prince, and the State, a fiery Trigon. And ſuerly he was well-aduiſed, that comprized a large Hiſtory in one Epithite, and honoured him with the title of *The Thriſe-learned Deane*. Onely I muſt needes graunt, one ſuch ſecret, and profound enemy, or ſhall I ſay? one ſuch thriſe-ſecret, and thriſe-profound enemy, was incomparably more pernicious, then a hundred Hatchets, or Country-cuffes; a thouſand Greenes, or Cunnycatchers; an army of Naſhes, or Pierces Penniles; a forreſt of wilde beaſtes; or whatſoeuer Ilias of profeſſed Euils. It is not the threatener, but the vnderminer, that worketh the miſchief: not the open aſſault, but the priuy ſurprize, that terrifieth the old ſouldiour: not the ſurging floud, but the low water, that affrayeth the expert Pilot: not the high, but the hidden rocke, that endangereth the ſkilfull Mariner: not the buſie Pragmaticall, but the cloſe Politician, that ſupplanteth the puiſſant ſtate: not proclaimed warre, but pretended peace, that ſtriketh the

Digitized by Google

deadly ſtroke. What Hiſtorian remembreth not the ſuttle Stratagemes of king Bacchus againſt the Indians: of king Midas againſt the Phrygians: of king Romulus againſt the / Sabines: of king Cyrus againſt the Lydians: of many other Politique Conquerours, againſt ſundry mighty nations, Principalities, Segniories, Citties, Caſtels, Fortreſſes? Braue Valour may ſometime execute with fury: but Proweſſe is weake in compariſon of other practiſes: & no puiſſance to Pollicy; no rage to craft; no force to witt; no pretence to Religiõ; (what ſpoiles vnder colour of Religiõ?) no text to the gloſſe; what will not the gloſſe maintaine by hooke, or crooke? It was not Mercuries woodknife that could ſo eaſely haue diſpatched Argus, the Lieutenant of Queene Juno, had not his inchaũting Pipe firſt lulled him aſleepe. And was not Vlyſſes in greater ieoperdy by the alluring Sirens, charming Muſicians, then by cruell Polyphemus, a boiſterous Giant? Vndoubtedly Cæſar was as ſingularly wiſe, as vnmatchably valiant; & rather a Fox, then a Lion: but in his wiſedome he was more affrayde of Sylla, thẽ of Marius; of Cato, then of Cataline; of Caſſius, then of Antony; of Brutus, then of Pompey; to be ſhort; of Saturne, then of Mars; of Mercury, then of Iupiter himſelfe. It were a long diſcourſe, to ſuruey the wily traines,

Digitized by Google

and crafty fetches of the old, and new world: but whoſoeuer is acquainted with Stratagemes, auncient or moderne, knoweth what an hourde of Pollicies lurketh in the ſhrowde of Diſſimulation: & what wonders may be atchieued by vnexpected ſurprizes. The profeſſed enemy rather encombreth himſelfe, & annoyeth his frendes, thē ouerthroweth his aduerſary, or oppreſſeth his foes. *Alexanders*, and *Cæſars* ſuddaine irruptions made them the Lordes of the world, and maſters of kinges: whiles greateſt threateners got nothing, but greateſt loſſe, and greater ſhame. What ſhould I ſpeake of the firſt founders of Monarchyes, *Ninus*, and *Cyrus?* of the Venturous *Argo-pilots*? of the worthy / *Heroes*? of the dowtieſt *Errant Knights*? of the *braueſt men* in all ages? whoſe mightieſt engin, (notwithſtanding whatſoeuer hyperbole of Valour, or fury) was *Scarborough warning*; and whoſe Conqueſtes were aſſoone knowen-abroad, as their Inuaſions. No power, like the vnlikely aſſault: nor any miſchief ſo peremptory, as the vnlooked-for affliction. He that warneth me, armeth me; and it is much, that a prepared minde, and boddy may endure; but vnſuſpected accidents are hardly remedied: and in the fayreſt weather of ſecurity, to offer the fowleſt play of hoſtility, is an incredible aduantage. So Cæſar Borgia, the ſouerain Type of

Digitized by Google

Macchiauels Prince, wan the Dukedome of Vrbin, in one day. So the Emperour Charles the Fiftes Army, paſſing thorough Roome, occurſiuely ſacked the Citty, and enriched themſelues exceedingly. So many inuincible ſtates haue bene ſuddainly ruinated: and many puiſſant perſonages eaſely vanquiſhed. Braue exploites, where the Cauſer as honorable, as the Effect admirable. But honorable, or diſhonorable, Pollicy was euer a priuy Counſell, whoſe Poſie, *Dolus, an Virtus*: Glory a rauiſhing Oration: Ambition a Courſer: Looue a hoat-ſpurre: Anger a fierbrand: Hope a graine of muſtard-ſeede: Courage an errant Knight: Couetice a marchant Vẽturer: Fury a fierce executioner; whoſe word, the ſword, and whoſe Law, *Non quà, ſed quò.* As Monarchies, Principalities, and Conqueſtes; ſo Pety-gouernements, Segniories, Lieutenantſhips, Magiſtracies, Maſterſhips, Felowſhips, haue their coolerable practiſes: and nothing is cunning, that is apparent. The Fox preacheth *Pax vobis*, to the Capons, and geeſe: and neuer worſe intended, then when the beſt pretended. Horaces, or rather Borgias.

Aſtuta ingenuum Vulpes imitata Leonem; the deepeſt grounde / of higheſt pollicies, and the very Stratageme of Stratagemes. The glorious Indian Conqueſtes are famouſly knowen to the world: and what was the Valorous Duke of Parma in his

Digitized by Google

braueſt Victories, but *Vulpes imitata Leonem*, and a new compounde of old Stratagemes? Iouius Fox in his militar, and amorous Empreſes, may call himſelfe a Fox: but ſome learned Clarkes, and iudicious Cenſours, profound Politiques, like Macchiauell, or Perne, (for Macchiauell neuer diſcourſed with his pen, as Perne deuiſed with his minde) would go very-nigh to call him a gooſe, that gaue for his mott: *Simul aſtu, et dentibus vtor.* And his Griphen in ſome opinions, was neuer a-whit the more terrible, for that luſtie Poſie, a iolly heroicall verſe in a Grammar ſchoole:

Vnguibus, et roſtro, atque alis armatus in hoſtem.

I neuer read that Alexanders Bucephalus, or Cæſars couragious horſe, had any ſuch, or ſuch glorious Poſies: and I beleeue Beuiſſes Arundell was no great braggard with motts. The Troian Horſe, or rather the Grecian Horſe, was not ſuch an Aſſe, to aduaunce himſelfe with any ſuch prowde Impreſe, as *Scandit fatalis machina muros:* but miniſtered ruthfull, and tragicall matter of that hawtie Poſie to the ſtately Poet. Did the flying Pegaſus of the redoubted Bellerophon, before his aduenturous expedition againſt the hideous Lion-dragon Chimæra, that is, againſt the fierce ſauages, which inhabited that fier-vomiting mountaine in Lycia, proude to arme himſelfe with a braue

Digitized by Google

Posie; or boast of his horrible mother Medusa, or of his owne Gorgonean winges? Did the fiery horses of the Sunne, that is, of the hoattest East-countryes, threaten Prince Phaeton, or the world, with a dreadsull Verse?

Tunc sciet ignipedum Vires expertus Equorum. May not peraduenture the prowdest horse to be countermotted with a poore fragment of Statius? *Seruiet asper Equus.* Or may not haply the dowtiest Asse be emblemed with a good old deuise? *insulso tribulus sapit asper asello.* The rowghest nett is not the best catcher of birdes: nor the finest pollicy, a professed Termagãt. Although Lysanders oxen said nothing, yet the Fox Lysander could tell, which of them was a sluggarde, and which laborious. It is not the Verball mott, but the actuall Impresse, that argueth a generous, or noble minde. Children, and fooles vse to crake: Action, the onely Embleme of Iugurth, and the notablest fellowes; whose manner is, *Plurimum facere; minimum de se loqui:* the honorablest deuise, that worthy Valour can inuent. The Tree is knowen by the fruite; and needeth no other Posie: the gallantest mott of a good Apple-tree, is a good apple; of a good warden-tree, a good warden; of a good limon-tree, a good limon; of a good palme, a good date; of a good Vine, a good grape; and so fourth: their leaues, their

Digitized by Google

Prognoſticatiōs; their bloſſomes, their boaſts; their braunches, and boughes, their brauery; their fruite, their armes, their emblemes, their nobility, their glory. I dare not ſay that Pittacus was as wiſe, as he, that beginneth like front-tufted Occaſion, (for Occaſion is balde behinde), and endeth like Ouids loouer, (for Ouids loouer must not attempt, but where he will conquer) : few reſoluter mottes, then *Aut nunc aut nunquam:* and what Valianter Poſie, then *Aut nunquam tentes, aut perfice:* but Pittacus was one of the ſeuen famous Maſters, and in his ſage wiſedome thought it a ſober leſſon, Foretel not, what thou intendeſt to atcheiue, leſſe peraduenture being fruſtrate, thou be laughed to ſcorne, and made a notable flowting-ſtocke. Perhaps he was an Aſſe; and ſpeaketh like a Foole: (for / who is not an Aſſe, & a foole with this Thomas Wiſedome?) but ſome plaine men are of his opinion, and will hardly beleeue that the frãkeſt braggards are the doubtieſt dooers Were I a collectour of witty Apothegs, like Plutarch, or of pithy Gnomes, like Theognis, or of dainty Emblemes, like Alciat : ſuerly Pittacus ſhould not be the laſt, or the leaſt in that Rhapſody. Meane-while it is nothing out-of my way, to prayſe the cloſe, or ſuſpicious Aſſe, that will not trouble any other with his priuy Counſell, but can be content to be his owne Secretary. There

Digitized by Google

be more queint experiments in an Vniuerſitie, then many a politique head would imagine. I could nominate the man, that could teach the Delphicall Oracle, and the Ægiptian crocodile to play their parts. His Ciuill toungue was a riddle; his Eccleſiaſticall toungue a Hieroglyphique; his face a viſard: his eyes cormorants: his eares martyrs: his witt a maze: his hart a iuggling ſticke: his minde a miſt: his reaſon a vayle: his affection a curbe: his conſcience a maſke: his Religion a triangle in Geometry: his Charity a Syllogiſme in Celarent: his hoſpitality eleuen monethes in the yeare, as good, as good Friday: for one moneth or very neere, he was reſident vpõ his Deanry, & kept opẽ houſe in the Ile, like Ember weeke. Of an other mans, no man more liberall: of his owne, no man more frugall. He deeply conſidered (as he did all thinges) that good Oeconomy was good Pollicy: that Learning was to be commended, but Lucre, and Prefermẽt to be ſtudied: that he ſoweth in vaine, which moweth not his owne aduantage: that nothing was to be beſtowed, without hope of vſance: that Loue, or Hatred auaile not, but where they may preuaile: that Affections were to be ſquared by occaſion, and Reaſons to be framed by proffit: that names of partialities, ſectes, and diuiſions, either in Ciuill, or Religious cauſes, were but fooliſh wordes, or

Digitized by Google

pelting termes; & all were to be eſtimated by their valuatiō in eſſe: that the true ſquire, & right Geometricall compaſſe of things, is habilitie, the onely thing, that by a ſoueraine prerogatiue deſerueth to be called *Subſtance*: that according to Chawcers Engliſh, there can be little *adling*, without much *gabbing*, that is, ſmall getting, without great lying, and cogging: that it was more wiſedome to borrow thē to lend *gratis*; that the rauens croking looſeth him many a fatt pray: that the forſtalling, & engroſing of priuy cōmodities, was a pretty ſupply of priuy Tithes: that many a little, by little & little maketh a mickle: that often returne of gaine amounteth: that the Fox neuer fareth better, then whē he is curſed moſt: that a ſiluer picklocke was good at a pinch; / and a golden hooke a cunning fiſher of men: that euery man was neereſt to himſelfe, and the ſkinne neerer, then the ſhirt: that there were many principles, and preceptes in Art, but one principall maxime, or ſouerain cautell in practiſe. *Si non caſtè, tamen cautè:* that there was no ſecurity in the world, without Epicharmus incredulity, Dions Apiſtie, or Heywoods Faſt binde, & faſt finde: that Bayard in the ſtable, and *Legem pone*, were ſubſtantiall points of Law: that many thinges are hypothetically to be practiſed, which may not Categorically be reuealed: that two frendes,

Digitized by Google

or bretheren may keepe counſell, when one of the two is away: that *Vnum neceſſarium*: and ſo forth. For, *Vincit, qui patitur*, would go nigh-hand to open the whole packe, and tell wonderfull Tales out-off Schoole. Pap-hatchet talketh of publiſhing *a hundred merry Tales* of certaine poore Martiniſts: but I could here diſmaſke ſuch a rich mummer, & record ſuch *a hũdred wiſe Tales* of memorable note, with ſuch a ſmart Morall, as would vndoubtedly make this Pamflet the vendibleſt booke in London, and the Regiſter one of the famouſeſt Autors in England. But I am none of thoſe, that vtter all their learning attonce: and the cloſe man (that was no mans frend, but from the teeth outward, no mans foe, but from the hart inward) may percaſe haue ſome ſecret frendes, or reſpectiue acquaintance; that in regarde of his calling, or ſome priuate conſideration, would be loth to haue his coate blaſed, or his ſatchell ranſacked. Beſide, what methodicall Artiſt, would allow the Encomium of the Fox, in the prayſe of the Aſſe, vnleſſe I would prooue by irrefragable demonſtration, that the falſe Fox was a true Aſſe; as I once heard a learned Phiſicion affirme, if a gooſe were a Fox, he was a Fox. Yet ſuerly by his fauour who could ſharply iudge, and durſt freely / ſpeake; He was a Fox, and a halfe, in his whole body, and in euery part of his ſoule: albeit I will not

Digitized by Google

deny, but he mought in ſome reſpectes be a Gooſe, and after a ſort (as it were) an Aſſe: eſpecially for defeating one without cauſe, and troubling the ſame without effect, that for ought he knew, might poſſibly haue it in him, to requite him aliue, and dead. Let the wronged party not be iniuried: and I dare auowe, he neuer did, nor euer will iniury, or preiudice any, in deede, word, or intention: but if any whoſoeuer will needes be offering abuſe in fact, or ſnip-ſnapping in termes, ſith other remedy ſhrinketh, he may peraduenture not altogither paſſe vnaunſwered. He thinketh not now on the booted foole, that alwaies ietteth in his ſtartups, with his Stilliard hatt in his drouſie eyes: but of an other good auncient Gentleman, that mought haue bene his father for age; his tutour for learning; his counſellour for wiſedome; his creditour for ſiluer; his Catechiſt for Religion; and his Ghoſtly father for deuotion. He once in a ſcoldes pollicy, called me Foxe betweene ieſt, and earneſt: (it was at the funerall of the honorable Sir Thomas Smith, where he preached, and where it pleaſed my Lady Smith, and the co-executours to beſtow certaine rare manuſcript bookes vpõ me, which he deſired): I aunſwered him betweene earneſt & ieſt, I might haply be a Cubb, as I might be vſed; but was ouer-yoũg to be a Fox, eſpecially in his preſence. He ſmiled,

Digitized by Google

and replyed after his manner with a Chameleons gape, and a very emphaticall nodd of the head. Whoſoeuer, or whatſoeuer he was; certes my old backfrend of Peter-houſe, was the locke of cunning conueyance: but ſuch a lock, as could not poſſibly be opened with any key, but the key of opportunity, and the hand of aduantage. If Opportunity were abroad, Iodocus / was not at home: where Occaſion preſented Aduantage, Pollicy wanted no dexterity; and the light-footed Fox was not ſo ſwift of foote, as nimble of witt, and quicke of hand. Some, that called him the lukewarme Doctour, and likened him to milke from the Cowe, founde him at ſuch a fitt ouerwarme for their feruenteſt zeale: and I remember a time, when One of the hotteſt furnace, ſhewing himſelfe little better then a Cowe; He in a quauering voyce, and a lightning ſpirite, taught the wild roe his leſſon. Haſt was not ſo forward to runne to a commodity, but Speede was ſwifter to fly to an aduantage; and where Haſt ſomwhat groſely bewrayed his forwardneſſe, Speede very finely marched in a cloude, and founde the goddeſſe Hypocriſie as ſly a Conductriſſe, as euer was fayre Venus to Æneas, or wiſe Minerua to Vlyſſes, in their queint paſſages. We may diſcourſe of naturall Magique, and ſupernaturall Cabale, whereof the learnedeſt and credibleſt

Digitized by Google

antiquity hath recorded wonderfull Hiſtories: but it is the rod of Mercury, and the ring of Gyges, that worke miracles: and no Mathematician, Magitian, or Cabaliſt may counteruaile him, that in his heroicall expeditions can walke in a cloude, like a Vapour, or in his diuine practiſes go inuiſible, like a Spirite. Braue Mindes, and Ventrous Harts, thanke him for this inualuable Note, that could teach you to atcheiue more with the little finger of Pollicy, then you can poſſibly compaſſe with the mighty arme of Proweſſe. Or elſe in my curious obſeruation of infinite Hiſtories, Hypocriſie had neuer bene the great Tyrãt of the world, & the huge Antichriſt of the Church. The weapon of the Fier, and Aier, is Lightening: the weapon of the Earth, & Water, Cunning. Was not he ſhrewdly encountred, that was preſtigiouſly beſieged, and inuiſibly / vnderminded with that that weapon of weapons? What other ſupply could haue ſeconded, or reſcued him, but Death; that had often bene the death of his Life in his worthieſt Frendes, and was eftſoones the death of his Death in his wylieſt enemy. Whoſe Spite was intricate, but detected: and whoſe Subtility maruelous, but diſuailed: and he that diſcloſed the ſame, is perhaps to leaue an immortall Teſtimoniall of his Indian Diſcoouery. In the meane time, as the admirable Geometrician Archimedes would

Digitized by Google

haue the figure of a Cylinder, or roller engraued vpon his Toombe: ſo it were reaſon, the thriſe-famous Deuine, ſhould haue the three-ſided figure, or equilater[al] Triãgle, imprinted vpon his Sepulchre: with this, or ſome worthier Epitaph, deuiſed according to the current Method of *Tria ſequunter Tria.*

The Coffin ſpeaketh.

Aſke not, what Newes? that come to viſit wood:
My treaſure is, Three Faces in one Hood:
A chaungling Triangle: a Turnecoate rood.

A lukewarme Trigon: a Three-edged toole:
A three-oard galley: a three-footed ſtoole:
A three-wing'd weathercock: a three-tongu'd ſchoole.

Three-hedded Cerberus, wo be vnto thee:
Here lyes the Onely Trey, and Rule of Three:
Of all Triplicities the A. B. C.

Some-body oweth the three-ſhapen Geryon a greater duty, in recogniſance of his often-promiſed curteſies; and will not be founde Vngratefull at occaſion. He were very ſimple, that would feare a coniuring Hatchet, a rayling Greene, or a threatening Naſh: but the old dreamer, like / the old dogge biteth ſore, and no foe to the flattering Perne, or pleaſing Titius: that haue ſugar in their lippes, gall in their ſtomackes:

Digitized by Google

water in the one hand, fier in the other; peace in their ſayings, warre in their doings; ſweetnes in their exhortatiōs, bitterneſſe in their canuaſſes; reuerēce in their titles, coouēn in ther actions: notable men in their kinde, but pitch-branded with notorious diſſimulation; large promiſers, compendious performers; ſhallow in charity, profounde in malice; ſuperficiall in theory, deepe in practiſe; maſters of Sophiſtry, Doctors of Hypocriſie; formall frends, deadly Enemies; thriſe-excellent Impoſtours. Theſe, theſe were the Onely mē, that I euer dreaded: eſpecially thatſame od mã *Triũ Litterarũ*, that for a linſy-woolſie wit, & a cheuerell conſciēce was *A Per* ſe A: other braggardes or threatners whatſoeuer I feare, as I feare Hobgoblin, & the Bugges of the night. Whē I haue ſought-vp my day-charmes, and night-ſpelles, I hope their power to hurt, ſhal be as ridiculouſly ſmall, as their deſire to affright, is outragiouſly great. I neuer ſtood ſtifly in defēce of mine own hability, or ſufficiency: they that impeach me of imperfection in learning, or practiſe, in diſcourſing, or endighting, in any art, or profeſſion, cōfute me not, but confirme mine own cōfeſſiō. It is onely my honeſty, & credit, that I endeuour to maintaine: other defectes I had rather ſupply by induſtry, thē cloake by excuſe: & referre the deciſiō of ſuch points to the arbitre-

Digitized by Google

mēt of Indifferēcy: to which alſo I preferre the Prayſes of my diſpraiſers: & beſeech Equity to rēder them their due, with a largeſſe of fauour. Iudgement is the wiſeſt reader of Bookes: and no Art of diſtinctions, ſo infallible, as grounded Diſcretion: which will ſoone diſcerne betweene White, and Blacke: and eaſely perceiue, what wanteth, what ſuperaboundeth; what becommeth, what / miſbecommeth; what in this, or that reſpect, deſerueth commendation; what may reaſonably, or probably be excuſed; what would be marked with an Aſteriſke, what noted with a blacke coale. As in mettals, ſo in ſtiles, he hath ſlender ſkill, that cannot deſcry copper from gold, tinne from ſiluer, iron from ſteele, the refuſe from the rich veyne, the droſſe from the pure ſubſtance. It is little of Value, either *for matter*, *or manner*, that can be performed in ſuch perfunctory Pamflets, on either ſide: but how little ſoeuer it be, or may appeare, for mine owne part I refuſe not to vnderly the Verdict of any curteous, or equall cenſure, that can diſcerne betwixt chalke, and cheeſe. *Touching the matter*, what wanteth, or might be expected here, ſhall be particularly, and largely recompenſed, aſwell in my Diſcourſes, intituled Naſhes S. Fame, which are already finiſhed, and attend the Publication: as alſo in other Supplemēts thereof, eſpecially thoſe of the

Digitized by Google

aboue-mētioned Gentlewoman, whō after ſome aduiſemēt it pleaſed, to make the Straunge Newes of the railing Villan, the cuſſionet of her needles, and pinnes. Though my ſcriblings may fortune to continue awhile, and then haue their deſert, according to the laudable cuſtome ; (what ſhould toyes, or dalliances liue in a world of buſineſſe ?) yet I dare vndertake with warrant, whatſoeuer ſhe writeth, muſt needes remaine an immortall worke ; and will leaue in the actiueſt world an eternall memory of the ſillieſt vermin, that ſhe ſhall voutſafe to grace with her bewtifull, and allectiue ſtile, as ingenious as elegant. *Touching the manner*, I take it a nice and friuolous curioſitie for my perſon, to beſtow any coſt vpon a trifle of no importance ; and am ſo ouerſhaddowed with the flooriſhing braunches of that heauenly plant that I may ſeeme to haue purpoſely preuented / all compariſon, in yeelding that homage to her diuine witt, which at my handes ſhe hath meritoriouſly deſerued. Albeit I proteſt, ſhe was neither bewitched with entreaty, nor iuggled with perſuaſion; nor charmed with any corruption: but onely moued with the reaſon which the Equity of my cauſe, after ſome little cōmunication, in her Vnſpotted Conſcience ſuggeſted. They that long to aduaunce their owne ſhame (I alwayes except a Phenix, or two) may brauely enter the liſtes

Digitized by Google

of compariſon, & do her the higheſt honour in deſpite, that they could poſſibly deuiſe in a ſeruiceable deuotiõ. She hath in my knowledge read the notableſt Hiſtoryes of the moſt-ſingular woomen of all ages, in the Bible, in Homer, in Virgill, (her three ſouerain Bookes, the diuine Archetypes of Hebrue, Greeke, and Roman Valour); in Plutarch, in Polyen, in Petrarch, in Agrippa, in Tyraquell, in whom not, that haue ſpecially tendered their dilligent deuoir, to honour the excellentest woomen, that haue liued in the world: and commending the meaneſt, extolling the worthieſt, imitating the rareſt, and approouing all according to the proportion of their endowments, enuieth none, but Art in perſon, and Vertue incorporate, the two precioufeſt creatures, that euer flooriſhed vpon earth. Other woomen may yeelde to Penelope: Penelope to Sappho: Sappho to Arachne: Arachne to Minerua: Minerua to Iuno: Iuno to none of her ſexe: She to all, that vſe her, and hers well; to none of any ſexe, that miſuſe her, or hers. She is neither the nobleſt, nor the faireſt, nor the fineſt, nor the richeſt Lady: but the gentleſt, and wittieſt, and braueſt, and inuincibleſt Gentlewoman, that I know. Not ſuch a wench in Europe, to vnſwaddle a faire Baby, or to ſwaddle a fowle puppy. Some of you may aime at her perſonage: and it

Digitized by Google

is / not the firſt time, that I haue termed her ſtile, the tinſell of the daintieſt Muſes, and ſweeteſt Graces: but I dare not Particulariſe her Deſcription according to my conceit of her beaudeſert, without her licence, or permiſſion, that ſtandeth vpon masculine, not feminine termes; and is reſpectiuely to be dealt withall, in regarde of her courage, rather then her fortune. And what, if ſhe can alſo publiſh more workes in a moneth thē Naſh hath publiſhed in his whole life; or the pregnanteſt of our inſpired Heliconiſts can equall? Could I diſpoſe of her Recreations, and ſome others Exerciſes; I nothing doubt, but it were poſſible (notwithſtanding the moſt-curious curioſitie of this age) to breede a new admiration in the minde of Contempt, & to reſtore the excellenteſt bookes into their wōted eſtate, euen *in integrum*. Let me be notoriouſly condemned of Partiality, and ſimplicity, if ſhe fayle to accompliſh more in gallant performance, (now ſhe hath condeſcended to the ſpinning-vp of her ſilken taſke) than I euer promiſed before, or may ſeeme to inſinuate now. Yet ſhe is a wooman; and for ſome paſſions may challenge the generall Priuiledge of her ſexe, and a ſpeciall diſpenſation in the cauſe of an affectionate frend, deuoted to the ſeruice of her excellent deſert; whom ſhe hath founde no leſſe, then the Handmayd of Art, the miſtres of

Digitized by Google

Witt, the Gentlewoman of right Gentleneſſe, and the Lady of right Vertue. Howbeit euen thoſe paſſions ſhe hath ſo ordered, and managed, with ſuch a witty temper of violent, but aduiſed motions; full of ſpirite, and bloud, but as full of ſenſe, and iudgement, that they may rather ſeeme the marrow of reaſon, than the froath of affection: and her hoatteſt fury may fitly be reſembled to the paſſing of a braue career by a Pegaſus, ruled with the reanes of a Mineruas bridle. Her Pen is / a very Pegaſus indeede, and runneth like a winged horſe, gouerned with the hand of exquiſite ſkill. She it is, that muſt returne the mighty famous worke of Supererogation with Benet, and Collect. I haue touched the booted Shakerley a little, that is alwayes riding, and neuer rideth; alwayes confuting, and neuer confuteth; alwayes ailing ſomething, and railing anything: that ſhamefully, and odiouſly miſuſeth euery frend, or acquaintance, as he hath ſerued ſome of his fauorableſt Patrons, (whom for certain reſpectes I am not to name), M. Apis Lapis, Greene, Marlow, Chettle, and whom not? that ſaluteth me with a *Gabrieliſſime Gabriel*, which can giue him the farewell with a Thomaſſiſſime Thomas, or an Aſſiſſime Aſſe; yet haue not called him a filthy companion, or a ſcuruy fellow, as all the world, that knoweth him, calleth him: that in his Pierce Penniles, and

Digitized by Google

Straunge Newes, the Bull-beggers of his courage, hath omitted no word, or phrase of his railing Dictionary, but onely *Tu es Starnigogolus*: and hath Valiantly vowed to haue *The Last Word*, to dye for't.

Plaudite Victori, Iuuenes hic quotquot adestis:
Nam me qui vicit, doctior est Nebulo.

The best is, where my Aunswere is, or may be deemed Vnsufficient, (as it is commonly ouer-tame for so wild a Bullocke), there She with as Visible an Analysis, as any Anatome, strippeth his Art into his doublet; his witt into his shirt; his whole matter, & manner into their first Principles; his matter *in Materiã Primam*; his manner *in formam primam*; and both in *Priuationem Vltimam*, id est, *his Last Word*, so gloriously threatened. I desire no other fauour at the handes of Curtesie, but that Art, and Witt may be her readers; & Equitie my iudge: to whose Vnpartiall Integrity I humbly appeale in the Premisses: with dutiful recom-/ mendatiõ of Nashes S. Fame, euẽ to S. Fame herselfe: who with her owne floorishing handes is shortly to erect a May pole in honour of his Victorious *Last Word*. Doubt ye not, gallãt Gentlemẽ, he shall finde the guerdon of his Valour, & the meede of his meritorious worke. Though my Pen be a slugplum, looke for a quill, as

Digitized by Google

quicke, as quickſiluer, & pitty the ſoary ſwaine, that hath incurred the indignatiõ of ſuch a quill; and may euerlaſtingly be a miſerable Spectacle for all libelling rakehelles, that otherwiſe might desperatly preſume to venture the foyle of their cranke folly. The ſtay of the Publicatiõ, reſteth onely at my inſtance: who can cõceiue ſmall hope of any poſſible account, or regard of mine owne diſcourſes, were that faire body of the ſweeteſt Venus in Print, as it is redoubtedly armed with the compleat harneſſe of the braueſt Minerua. When his neceſſary defence hath ſufficiently accleered him, whom it principally concerneth to acquitt himſelfe: She ſhall no ſooner appeare in perſon, like a new Starre in Caſſiopea, but euery eye of capacity will ſee a conſpicuous difference betweene her, and other myrrours of Eloquence: and the wofull ſlaue of S. Fame muſt either blindfolde himſelfe with inſenſible peruerſitie, or behold his owne notorious folly, with moſt-ſhamefull ſhame. It will then appeare, as it were in a cleere Vrinall, whoſe witt hath the *greene-ſickneſſe*: and I would deeme it a greater maruell, then the mightieſt wõder, that happened in the famous year, 88. if his cauſe ſhould not haue the *falling-ſickneſſe*, that is encoũtred with an arme of ſuch force. M. Stowe, let it be enchronicled for one of the ſingularities, or miracles of this age, that a

Digitized by Google

thing lighter then Tarletons Toy, and vayner then Shakerleyes conceit, that is, Naſh, ſhould be the ſubiect of ſo inualuable a worke: and be it knowen to Impudency / by theſe Preſentes, that his braſen wall is battred to Pin duſt, and his Iron gate ſhaken all to nothing. It is in the leaſt of her energeticall lines to do it: more eaſely, thē a fine thread cracketh a iāgling Bell. A pretty experiment: & not vnlike ſome of her ſtraunge inuentions, and rare deuiſes, as forcible to mooue, as feat to delight. The iſſue will reſolue the doubtfulleſt minde: and I am content to referre Incredulity, to the viſible, and palpable euidence of the Terme Probatory. When either the Light of Nature, and the Sunne of Art muſt be in Eclipſe: or the ſhining rayes of her ſingular giftes will diſplay themſelues in their accuſtomed brightneſſe; and diſcoouer the baſe obſcurity of that miſchieuous Planet, that in a vile ambition ſeeketh the exaltation of his fame, by the depreſſion of their credit, that are hable to extinguiſh the proudeſt glimze of his Lampe. Her rare perfections can liuelyeſt blaſon themſelues: and this penne is a very vnſufficient Oratour to expreſſe the heauenly bewties of her minde: but I neuer knew Vertue, a more inuiolable Virgine, then in her excellent ſelfe: and the day is yet to come, wherein I euer founde her Witt a defectiue,

Digitized by Google

or Eclyptique creature. She knoweth, I flatter not her Fortune: and if I honour her Vertue, whoſe confirmed modeſtie I could neuer ſee disguiſed with any gloſe of commendation; who can blame me for diſcharging ſome little part of a great dutie? She hath in meere gratuity beſtowed a largeſſe vpon her affectionate ſeruaunt; that imputeth the ſame, as an exceſſiue fauour, to her hyperbolicall curteſie, not to any merite in himſelfe: but the leſſer my deſert, the greater her liberality; whom I cannot any way reacquite, farther then the zeale of a moſt-deuoted minde may extende; as inceſſantly thankefull, as infinitly debtfull. For to addreſſe a plauſible / diſcourſe, or to garniſh a Panegyricall Oration in her prayſe, as occaſion may preſent; will appeare to be a taſke of Ciuill Iuſtice, not any peece of Ciuill curteſie, when her owne ſiluer Tractes ſhall publiſh the precious valour of her golden Vertues, and decipher the ineſtimable worth of the Autor by her diuine handyworke. At the firſt vewe whereof, as at the piercing ſight of the amiableſt Bewtie, who can tell how ſuddaine Paſſions may worke? or what a ſting, ſome tickling Interiection may leaue in the hart, and liuer of affection? I am euer prone to hope, as I wiſh, euen the beſt of the worſt: and although wilfull Malice be a ſtiffe, and ſtubberne aduerſary to appeaſe, yet I haue ſeene a greater

Digitized by Google

miracle, then the pacification of Paper-warres, or the attonement of Inkhorne foes. There ſhe ſtandeth, that with the finger of Induſtry, and the toungue of Affability, hath acheiued ſome ſtraunger woonders, vpon as rough, and harſh fellowes, as

The noddy Naſh, whom euery ſeruing Swaſh
With pot-ieſtes daſh, and euery whip-dog laſh:

(for the ryme is more famous, then was intended): and with the ſame cauſes emprooued, why may She not directly, or violently accompliſh the ſame effectes? or what is impoſſible to the perſuaſiue, and Patheticall influence of Reaſon, and Affection? It is a very diſmall, and caitiue Planet, that can finde in his hart to encounter thoſe two gracious Starres, with malitious aſpectes: which he muſt deſpitefully encounter, that will obſtinately oppoſe his peeuiſh rancour to her ſweete Ciuility. In caſe nothing elſe will preuayle with inſatiable Enuy, and vnquenchable Malice, (for ſo I am eftſoones informed, whatſoeuer courſe be taken for the mitigation of his rage): yet I am vehemently perſuaded in Phyſique, and reſolued in Pollicy, that the Oile of Scor/pions will finally heale the woondes of Scorpions. I know One, that experimentally prooued what a rod in lye could do with the curſteſt boy in a Citty; and founde the Imparitiue moode a better Oratour,

Digitized by Google

then the Optatiue. It may fortune, the ſame man hath ſuch a Whipſydoxy in ſtore for a Iack-ſauce, or vnmannerly puppy, as may Schoole him to turne-ouer a new leafe, and to cry the pittifulleſt Peccaui of a wofull Penitent. For my part, whom at this inſtant it ſmartly behooueth to be reſolute, I confeſſe I was neuer more entangled, and intricated in the diſcourſe of mine owne reaſon, then ſince I had to do with this deſperate Dick ; that dareth vtter, and will cogge any thing to ſerue his turne. Not to confute him, in ſome reſpectes were perhaps better: to confute him, is neceſſary. Were it poſſible, to confute him in not confuting him, I am of opinion, it would be done: (for Inſolency, or any iniury would be repreſſed by order of Law, where order of Law is a ſufficient remedy: and Silence, in ſome caſes, were the fineſt Eloquence ; or Scorne, the fitteſt anſwere) : and haply I could wiſh, not to confute him in confuting him, (for the diſcoouery of Cunny-catchers doth not greatly edifie ſome bad mindes) : but ſeeing he is ſo deſperate, that he will not be confuted with not confuting, I muſt deſire his Patience, to be a little content to be confuted with confuting, rather after his, or others guiſe, then after my manner. *Aunſwere not a foole according to his fooliſhneſſe, leſt thou alſo be like him: anſwere a foole according to his fooliſhneſſe, leſt he be wiſe in*

Digitized by Google

his owne conceit. They are both Prouerbes of the wiſeſt Maſter of Sentences: of whom alſo I haue learned that to the horſe belongeth a whipp; to the aſſe a ſnaffle; to the fooles backe a rod. Let no man be wiſer then Salomon. The fooles-head muſt not / be ſuffred to coy itſelfe: the colte muſt feele the whip, or the wande; the aſſe the ſnaffle, or the gode; the fooles backe the rod, or the cudgell. Let the colt, the Aſſe, the foole beware in time: or he may peraduenture feele them indeede: with ſuch a *Tu autem*, as hath not often bene quauered in any language. If Peace, or Treatie may not be heard, Warre ſhall commaunde Peace; and he muſle the mouth of rankeſt Impudency, or fierceſt hoſtility, that can do it; and do it otherwiſe, then is yet imagined: and yet nothing like that inſpired Gentlewooman. Whoſe Penne is the ſhott of the muſket, or rather a ſhaft of heauen, ſwifter then any arrow, and mightier then any hand-weapon, when Curteſie is repulſed, and hoſtility muſt enforce amity: but otherwiſe how gratiouſly amiable, how diuinely ſweete? Gentlemen, looke vpon the louely gliſtering Starre of the morning; and looke for ſuch an Oriēt Starre, whē She diſplayeth the reſplendyſhng beames of her bright wit, and pure bounty. Meane-while, if ſome little ſhimering light appeare at a little creuiſe, I haue my requeſt;

Digitized by Google

and ſome pretty conuenient leyſure, to take order with an other kinde of Straunge Newes in Weſtminſter Hall. It is ſome mens fortune to haue their handes full of vnneedefull buſineſſe attonce: and for miſelfe, I ſhould make no great matter of two, or three ſuch glowing Irons in the fier, were it not ſome ſmall grieſe, or diſcouragement, to conſider, that nothing can be perfectly, or ſufficiently performed by halues, or fragments. Which neceſſary interruption hath bene the vtter diſgrace of the premiſſes; and a great hinderance to my larger Diſcourſes, more ample trifles. I can but craue pardon; and prepare amendes, as leyſure and occaſion may affourde opportunity. Learned wittes can ſkilfully examine, and honeſt mindes / will vprightly conſider Circumſtances, with curteous regarde of Fauour, or due reſpect of Reaſon: in whoſe onely Indifferency, as in a ſafe, and ſweet harborough, I repoſe my whole affiance, and ſecuritie, as heretofore. And ſo for this preſent I ſurceaſe to trouble your gentle curteſies: of whoſe Patience I haue (according to particular occaſions) ſometime vnmannerly, but modeſtly; often familiarly, but ſincerely; moſt-what freely, but conſideratly; alwayes confidently, but reſpectiuely; in euery part ſimply, in the whole tedioufly preſumed vnder correction. I writ onely at idle howers, that I dedicate onely to *Idle Howers*: or

Digitized by Google

would not haue made ſo vnreaſonably bold, in no needefuller Diſcourſe, then *the Prayſe, or Supererogation of an Aſſe.*

This 27. of Aprill: 1593. Your mindefull debtour, G. H.

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Errours eſcaped in the Printing.
*With certaine Additions to be inſerted.**

Page.	*faultes.*		*amended.*
26	for angoy,	read	agony.
31	ſcholeth,		ſchooleth.
49	bewixt		betwixt.
67	railing ſtile, without the two prickes, or colon.		
85	very Miniſter		euery Miniſter.
90	inſtringment		infringement.
98	not will		will not.
107	looker-on		lookers-on.
121	ſuch ſweating		ſuch a ſweating.
139	or diſcourſer		or a diſcourſer.
147	thy riot		by riot.
202	ſupriſes		ſurpriſes.
205	at the leaſt		or the leaſt.
219	Orientall		Orient.

KNow alſo, Gentle Reader, that it was the Writers meaning to deuide this Treatiſe into three bookes: the Second beginning at the *Aduertiſement to Pap-hatchet and Martin Marprelate:* the Third at, *So then of Pappadocio:* but in the Originall, or vncorrected coppy there was

* These have all been attended to in their respective places.

Digitized by Google

not any ſuch diuiſion expreſly ſett-downe: neyther were the Additions following, inſerted in their proper places, but annexed to the end of the Third booke, noted thus:

In the *Firſt Booke*, page 46. after *Cloude*, inſert. What . . . . maſter. [See p. 93, ll. 13—24.]

In the *Second Booke*, Page 77. after *edifieth*, inſert. Plato . . . . conceites? [See p. 135, ll. 7—18.]

In *the ſame booke*, Page 87. after *Innouation*, inſert. And I . . . . *Poplars*. [See p. 149, l. 21, to p. 150, l. 22.]

In the *Third booke*, Page 205, after *Pollicie*, inſert. that Learning . . . . cogging. [See p. 310, l. 9, to p. 311, l. 8.]

Theſe fower Additions in their ſeuerall bookes, I commende to the correction of the curteous Reader: and ſo take my leaue.

FINIS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFVLL

my very good friend, M. Doctour Haruey.

GOOD M. Doctour Haruey, promiſe I account debte, eſpecially to ſo eſpeciall a frend: and therefore I haue now againe laboured to diſcharge miſelfe of it. I would I were of deſert to ſet-forth your long-deſerued prayſe, and of hability to expreſſe your ſingular habilities, in ſtile, knowledge, and other moſt commendable vertues. What is in my power, the leaſt of your frendes ſhall commaunde: what is not, I can but wiſh: which I would moſt earneſtly wiſh, if that might ſerue, though I neuer ſhould wiſh more. I will not trouble your grauer ſtudies, but pray for your healthes continuaunce: and will moſt willingly performe more, if occaſion ſerue.

Oxford, this 10. of Iuly. 1593.

Yours euer to commaunde,

Iohn Thorius.

Digitized by Google

Sonet.

DEfam'd by One, who moſt himſelfe defameth,
Write worthy Haruey: for the wiſe applaude thee:
Shame be his hyer, that fowly himſelfe ſhameth,
And would of thy deſerued right defraude thee.
And | if you force the vndeſerued wrong,
Wherewith ſome ſimple Ignorant diſtaines thee:
You in your Wiſedome may exceede as long,
As he in Folly fooliſhly diſdaines thee.
For ſharpe-eyde Equitie hath deſcride to all,
Th' iniurious vayne, that ſettes his penne to ſchoole:
VVhoſe railing tendes vnto your wiſedomes fall,
And prooues all fonde, to prooue himſelfe a Foole.
VVhich monſtrous Folly would be leaſt in haſt:
As Wiſedomes age will make him know at laſt.

Iohn Thorius.

Incloſed in the ſame Letter.

AND that I might not be held laſt in remembraunce, though abſent, that in your preſence haue ſought the ſelfe-proffering cauſe of after-memory: I haue once more, (as he, that deuoteth himſelfe, and his poore labours to your good liking), how badly you may ſee, but how hartely I wiſh you could ſee, or I could ſay; writ theſe my pure deuotions, and Zealous lines: with as

Digitized by Google

true deſire to honour yourſelfe, according to your worth, as I haue bene wanting the deſert, which your curteous nature hath affourded me. I requeſt Sir, but your acceptance, and your fauour, which if I gaine, I haue got more, then my due: and ſo wiſhing your continuall bliſſe, I ende, as one with oft prayers deſiring to be held,

Your bound by much deſert,
Antony Chewt.

Sonet. /

Proceede moſt worthy Lines, in your diſdaine,
Againſt the falſe ſuggeſtions you abuſe:
VVhoſe raſcall ſtile deſerued hath to gaine
The hateful title of a railing Muſe.
Doubtleſſe the wiſeſt, that ſhall chaunce to read you,
In true Iudiciall of a quiet thought,
Will giue applauſe vnto the wit, that bread you,
And you ſhall winne the good, that you haue ſought.
VVinne more: and ſince the foole defames you ſtill,
The foole, whom Shame hath ſtained with fowle blott,
Performe on him your diſcontented will:
Fame *ſhall be your meede:* Shame *ſhall be his lott.*
And ſo proceeding, you ſhall ſo redeeme
The name, that he would drowne in blacke eſteeme.
Subſcribed, Sh: VVy:
for, Shores VVife.

Digitized by Google

Sur l'Apologie de Monſieur le treſ-docte & treſ-eloquent Docteur Haruey : par le Sieur de Fregeuille du Gaut.

Celuy qui prouoqué publie ſa defence,
Peut auecques raiſon ſa cauſe déployer ;
La Loy de Talion ne peut moins, qu'ottroyer
Iuſt permiſſion de repayer l'offence.
Mais celuy qui enflé, a eſcrire commence,
A diffamer autruy, tachant a ſ'employer :
De droit ne peut pretendre adueu ou bon loyer,
Ains l'infame intenté luy vient pour recompenſe.
I'aime / pourtant par tout vn ſtile moderé,
Meſmes ſi on reſpond au ſot demeſuré,
Car on n'a point raiſon d'imiter ſa ſottiſe.
Marri ſui mon d'Haruey de te voir prouoqué,
Mais treſ-aiſe qu'eſtant indignement piqué ;
Ta Docte reſponſe eſt eloquente & raſſiſe.

His Sonet, that will iuſtifie his word, and dedicateth Naſhes S. Fame to Immortalitie.

A Dame, more ſweetly braue, then nicely fine ;
Yet fine, as fineſt Gentlewomen be :
Brighter, then Diamant in euery line ;
Is Penniles ſo VVitleſſe ſtill ? quoth She.
If Naſh will felly gnaſh, and rudely flaſh :
Snip-ſnap a craſh, may lend S. Fame a gaſh.

Digitized by Google

Skill *read the Ryme, and put it in* Truthes *purſe:*
(Experience *kiſſeth* Reconcilements *hand*) *:*
If warning-peece be ſcorn'd, Spite *may heare worſe:*
Though Looue *no warriour be,* Right *leades a bande.*
How faine would Curteſie *theſe iarres ſurceaſe?*
How glad would Charitie *depart in peace?*

But if Sir Raſh continue ſtill Sir Swaſh ;
He liues, that will him daſh, and laſh, and ſqwaſh.
Hæc quoq ; culpa tua eſt: hæc quoq ; pœna tua eſt.

An other occaſionall admonition.

Fame rowſ'd herſelfe, and gan to ſwaſh abowt:
Boyes ſwarm'd: youthes throng'd: bloudes ſwore: brutes rear'd the howt:
Her meritorious worke, a Wonderclowte:
Did euer Fame ſo brauely play the Lowte?
I / chaunc'd vpon the Ryme: and wondred much
What courage of the world, or Miſter wight
Durſt terrible S. Fame ſo raſhly tuch.
Or her redoutable Bull-begging knight.
Incontinent I heard a piercing voyce,
Not Ecchos voyce, but ſhriller then a Larke:
Sith Deſtiny allottes no wiſer choyce,
Paſtime appoſe the Pickle-herring clarke.
Quiet thy rage, Imperious Swiſh-ſwaſh:
Or Wo be to thy horrible triſh-traſh.
Eſt benè, non potuit dicere: dixit, *Erit.*

Digitized by Google

An Apoſtrophe to the Health of his abuſed Frendes.

Liue Father ſweet: and miſcreant Varlets dye,
That wrong my parent Hart, and brother Eye.
Deereſt of Eyes, contemne thy caitiue foes:
Kindeſt of Hartes, enioy thy firme repoſe.
Sky, *with a patron Eye aſpect that Eye,*
That Eye, eſpouſed to the Virgin Sky.
Art, *with a Looner hart preſerue that Hart,*
That Hart, deuoted to the heauenly Art.
Bleſſings, *deſcend from your Empyreal throne.*
And lend a bounteous eare to ſuppliant mone.
Ambroſiall ſpringes of cleereſt influence,
Fountaines reſtoratiue of cordiall bliſſe,
Deigne Zeale proſtrate your tendreſt indulgence,
And ſouerainly redreſſe that is amiſſe.

L'enuoy.

Volumes of Thankes, and Prayſe, your ſtore combine
In paſſionateſt Hymnes, and Pſalmes diuine.

Digitized by Google

The Printer's Postſcript.

SWeet Gentlemē, hauing committed the Premiſſes to the Preſſe, and acquainting certaine learned and fine men with ſome other of the commendatory Letters, and Sonnets of M. Thorius, and M. Chewt: there was ſuch an eſpeciall liking conceiued of two other their writings, that I was finally entreated, or rather ouertreated, to giue them alſo their welcome in Print; as not the vnfitteſt lines, that haue bene publiſhed to interteine laſie howers, or to employ drowſie eyes. Sometime in the braueſt ſhowes there is little performed: and ſometime a poore Publicane may worke as great a worke of Supererogation as a proude Phariſe. I am not the meeteſt to blaſe other mens armes: and they are beſt furniſhed to be their owne tongues, that can ſo well pleade for themſelues, and their friendes. I can but recommende their learned exerciſe, and mine own vnlearned labour, to your gentle acceptation.

Digitized by Google

To the right worſhipfull, my very aſſured frend, M. Doctour Haruey.

MY ſilence thus long, good M. Doctour Haruey, was not occaſioned either by forgetfulneſſe, or by negligence: but rather for want both of conuenient leaſure, and of ſufficient argument: being very vnwilling either to ſpend time often in writing of vnmateriall lines, or to trouble any eſpeciall frend with reading them. Yet becauſe amitie is maintained by this loouing kinde of intercourſe, & becauſe Cuſtome hath allowed, that Affection induced, to expreſſe a carefull memory of the continuance of frendſhip, by writing euen vpon ſmall, or no occaſion: though the Letter were ſigned with nothing elſe, / but, *Si vales, bene eſt: ego valeo*: left longer ſilence might cauſe me to incurre iuſt reprehenſion, and that you may receaue ſome ſlender token of my often thinking on you: I ſend you encloſed three *Stanzaes*, though ſimple in conceit, or other regard, yet were they equall to my good will, they would, vndoubtedly excell, and ſhould be ſome way ſutable to your right excellent giftes. If they pleaſe, or not diſpleaſe you, and may ſeeme worthy, or not altogether vnworthy to ſerue as foiles with my other Sonnets, which you receaued before, to thoſe much worthier Verſes, which you

Digitized by Google

haue of much happier Poets, then miſelfe : you may therein do your pleaſure, whereto onely they are conſecrated. Thus hoping that you are perſuaded of me, as of one affectionatly your owne to vſe, and commaunde at your appointment, I leaue you with my moſt harty, and humble recommendations.

Oxford: the 3. of Auguſt. 1593.

Yours alwayes at commaunde,
Iohn Thorius.

Stanzaes.

Among the Greekes, ſweet Homers *copious Verſe*
Foregoing times to Fames ſwift winges commended :
The Latins, Virgils *noble worke reherſe :*
Nor yet in theſe were auncient prayſes ended.
Demoſthen's *rich ſtile, thorough Greece was blazed,*
And Tullyes *forcing toungue made Roome amazed*
Our moderne Age to egall with the paſſed,
The Italian *pleaſing Muſe hath done her beſt :*
The learned French *Pennes haue themſelues ſurpaſſed :*
And worthy Engliſh *wittes haue banniſht reſt.*
Midſt whom, who not emblaſon Haruey's *name,*
Wrong him, themſelues, and Englands growing Fame.

Digitized by Google

Yeelding / fond Naſh thy glory ſhalt not ſtaine,
But rather ſhalt encreaſe thy praiſe hereby :
Thy frendes qſall know thy iudgement not ſo vaine,
But thou diſcernes where true deſert doth fly.
And thy deſert by ſo much ſhall ſeeme greater,
By how much thou art knowne to know thy better.

Iohn Thorius.

Sir, ſuch a patheticall Aſſe haue I found deciphred in your moſt learned and witty Diſcourſe of that poore Creture, as I know will proue the eternall Memoratiue of one M. Naſh. Yet I by Experience haue found more: that it is the nature of a true Aſſe, (to which Aſſe peraduenture this was dedicated) that a *greene Figge* being handſomly tyed to his chappes, he no ſooner ſmelleth it, but he followes his noſe ſo farre, that he ſcapeth fayre in vneeuen ground, if he breaketh not his necke. And this Note I would not but impart vnto you: as a Caueat worthy to be remēbred amongſt other ſecrets of that beaſt. For doubtleſſe your philoſophicall Aſſe will make Alchimy vpon it. I pray you diſpoſe of it at your beſt pleaſure. When any other ſuch Memorandum fortunes into my hand, you ſhall ſee it: and ſo in haſt recommending you to your better ſtudies, I reſt Sir, at your ſeruice.

An: Ch.

Digitized by Google

The Asses Figg.

So long *the Rhennish furie of thy braine,*
Incenst with hot fume of a Stilliard Clime,
Lowd-lying Nash, in liquid termes did raine,
Full of absurdities, and of slaundrous ryme.

So / much *thy Pot-iests in a Tapster humour,*
(For thats the Quintessence of thy Newgate fashion)
Thy tossepot maiesty, and thy Fame did rumour,
In wondrous Agonyes of an Alehouse passion.

So well *thy wydemouth'd, or thy Oisterwhore phrase*
(Yet Gentry bragges her of thy lowsie degree)
Aptly hath knowne thine Armory to blase
In termes peculiar vnto none but thee.

So soone *siue Penniworth of thy groser witt*
(Yet thou art witty, as a woodcock would be)
More then autenticall, hath learn'd to gett
Thy Muse intitled, as it truly should be.

And now so neatly *hath thy railing merit*
(I should haue said Ramme-ally meditations)
Procur'd applause vnto thy Clarret spirite,
And sack-sopt miseries of thy Confutations.

That now each Iuy-bush *weepes her Teares in ale:*
The Fish-wiues Commonwealth, *alack forlorne,*

Digitized by Google

Moornes in ſmall drink, ſharp, ſingle, ſowre, and ſtale:
And thy long-booted gentry, *ragged and torne*
Wailes new petitions to the Diuels good grace:
Although the laſt, God knowes, gott little meede.
But thow'lt to Hell, when ſhiftes can haue no place,
Perhaps to Hanging too, when time ſhall neede.
Yet firſt wilt ride, raile, ryme me downe to Hell:
(Oh but beware ſtrange bugges at ſuch a game):
I haue a trick, to teach a Gooſe to ſpell
Himſelfe an Aſſe, *out-off his* Aſſes *name.*

An: Ch.

FINIS.

END OF VOL. II.

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

Digitized by Google

The Huth Library.

THE WORKS

OF

GABRIEL HARVEY, D.C.L.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED,
WITH MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (EDIN.), F.S.A. (SCOT.),
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. I.

MEMORIAL-INTRODUCTION.
LETTERS TO AND FROM EDMUND SPENSER.
LETTERS FROM LETTER-BOOK.
FOVRE LETTERS AND CERTAINE SONNETS, ETC., ETC.
A LETTER OF NOTABLE CONTENTS, ETC.
1579—1593.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.
1884.
50 *Copies.*

Digitized by Google

Printed by Hazell, Watson, and Viney, Limited, London and Aylesbury.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google